

EVANGELICAL BIBLE COLLEGE OF WESTERN AUSTRALIA



HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS.

WITH REFERENCE TO PROPHECY AND THE GREEK PERFECT TENSE

VOLUME 21

THE LAST PASSOVER

by

DR PETER MOSES AND DR JOHN MCEWAN

[BOOK 74-21]

REVISED 2021

WHO IS JESUS CHRIST?

Professor Simon Greenleaf was one of the most eminent lawyers of all time. His "Laws of Evidence" for many years were accepted by all States in the United States as the standard methodology for evaluating cases. He was teaching law at a university in the United States when one of his students asked Professor Greenleaf if he would apply his "Laws of Evidence" to evaluate an historical figure. When Greenleaf agreed to the project he asked the student who was to be the subject of the review. The student replied that the person to be examined would be Jesus Christ. Professor Greenleaf agreed to undertake the examination of Jesus Christ and as a result, when he had finished the review, Simon Greenleaf personally accepted the Lord Jesus Christ as his Saviour.

Professor Greenleaf then sent an open letter to all jurists in the United States jurists saying in part "I personally have investigated one called Jesus Christ. I have found the evidence concerning him to be historically accurate. I have also discovered that Jesus Christ is more than a human being, he is either God or nothing and having examined the evidence it is impossible to conclude other than he is God. Having concluded that he is God I have accepted him as my personal Saviour. I urge all members of the legal profession to use the "Laws of Evidence" to investigate the person of the Lord Jesus Christ and if you find that he is wrong expose him as a faker but if not consider him as your Saviour and Lord"

HOW CAN I BE SAVED?

Salvation is available for all members of the human race.

Salvation is the most important undertaking in all of God's universe. The salvation of sinners is never on the basis of God's merely passing over or closing His eyes to sin. God saves sinners on a completely righteous basis consistent with the divine holiness of His character. This is called grace. It relies on God so man cannot work for salvation it neither can he deserve it. We need to realise that the creation of this vast unmeasured universe was far less an undertaking than the working out of God's plan to save sinners.

However the acceptance of God's salvation by the sinner is the most simple thing in all of life. One need not be rich, nor wise nor educated. Age is no barrier nor the colour of one's skin. The reception of the enormous benefits of God's redemption is based upon the simplest of terms so that there is no one in all this wide universe who need be turned away.

How do I become a Christian?

There is but one simple step divided into three parts. First of all I have to recognise that I am a sinner (Romans 3:23; 6:23; Ezekiel 18:4; John 5:24).

Secondly realising that if I want a relationship with Almighty God who is perfect, and recognising that I am not perfect, I need to look to the Lord Jesus Christ as the only Saviour (1 Corinthians 15:3; 1 Peter 2:24; Isaiah 53:6; John 3:16).

Thirdly, by the exercise of my own free will I personally receive the Lord Jesus Christ as my Saviour, believing that He died personally for me and that He is what He claims to be in an individual, personal and living way (John 1:12; 3:36; Acts 16:31; 4:12).

The results of Salvation

The results of this are unbelievably wonderful.
 My sins are taken away (John 1:29)
 I possess eternal life now (1 John 5:11,12),
 I become a new creature in Christ [2 Corinthians 5:17),
 The Holy Spirit takes up His residence in my life (1 Corinthians 6:19)
 And I will never perish (John 10:28-30).

This truthfully is life's greatest transaction. This is the goal of all people; this is the ultimate of our existence. We invite and exhort any reader who has not become a Christian by trusting in the Lord Jesus Christ to follow these simple instructions and be born again eternally into God's family (Matthew 11:28; John 1:12; Acts 4:12; 16:31).

© **Evangelical Bible College of Western Australia 2021**

Many other Christian resources are available freely from our internet web site: www.ebcwa.org.au and www.orakeibaptist.co.nz for weekly messages.

For further information contact Dr Peter Moses at pjmoses@bigpond.com.au

f

We encourage you to freely copy and distribute these materials to your Pastor and friends. You only need written permission from EBCWA if you intend using the materials in publications for resale. We encourage wide distribution freely!

CONTENTS

NO	SUBJECT	MATT	MARK	LUKE	JOHN	PAGE
	PREFACE AND INTRODUCTION					3
139	JUDAS AND RULERS CONSPIRE	26:1-5 14-16	14:1-2 10-11	22:1-6		6
140	PREPARATION FOR PASSOVER	26:17-19	14:12-16	22:7-13		27
141	LAST PASSOVER – JERUSALEM	26:20	14:17	22:14-18 24-30		35
142	THE FEET WASHING				13:1-20	43
143	JUDAS WITHDRAWS	26:21-25	14:18-21	22:21-23	13:21-35	59
144	THE LORD'S SUPPER	26:26-30	14:22-25	22:19-20		84
145	PREDICTION OF PETER'S FALL	26:31-35	14:27-31	22:31-34	13:36-38	93
	DOCTRINES					106
	HARMONY					107

PREFACE TO THE EBCWA HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS PROJECT 2021

We decided early in 2021 to upgrade the Harmony of the Gospels series, which was originally published in a series of volumes almost 20 years ago with volume 1 appearing in July 2002. These volumes were revised some 10 years ago. The complete Harmony is currently published in 27 volumes as seen below. The numbering of the books for this major upgrade will remain the same.

The completion of the Greek Perfect Tense project in 2018-2019, where around 1200 individual occurrences of the Perfect Tense verbs were reviewed, now allows us to incorporate additional value into this revision of the Harmony of the Gospels. This was published in 21 volumes including a series of parallel workbooks

The Perfect Tense project uncovered 8 categories, [1] Unbeliever, [2] Believer, [3] God the Father, [4] God the Son, [5] God the Holy Spirit, [6] The Church, [7] Israel and [8] People and Places, and covered the whole New Testament. The spread of these categories of perfect tense verbs, both in the New Testament as a whole, and the Gospel, is as follows.

Category	Unbeliever	Believer	Father	Son	Spirit	Church	Israel	Others
NT	41	158	112	274	109	241	108	151
Gospels	9	16	42	195	46	34	60	64

The predominance of the perfect tense verbs relating to the Lord Jesus Christ in both of the categories is noted with the percentage of the Son increasing from 22.9% within the entire New Testament, to 41.8% when the Gospels are taken as a separate group.

The focus in the Gospels is therefore on the Lord Jesus Christ, the Author and Finisher of our faith.

The new revision of the Harmony of the Gospels will also contain Prophecies fulfilled at the First Advent demonstrated in the Gospels, showing how there is an interweaving of different facets of God's Eternal Plan as a reality to encourage us all.

LIST OF VOLUMES IN THE 2021 HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS

BOOK NO	TITLE
74-1	THE COMING OF CHRIST
74-2	JOHN THE BAPTIST AND NICODEMUS
74-3	EARLY MINISTRY OF CHRIST IN GALILEE
74-4	HEALING AND THE SABBATH
74-5	THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT
74-6	CHRIST'S MINISTRY IN GALILEE
74-7	OPPOSITION FROM THE PHARISEES
74-8	PARABLES AND THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN
74-9	MIRACLES
74-10	MINISTRY OF THE DISCIPLES
74-11	THE BREAD OF LIFE
74-12	MOUNT OF TRANSFIGURATION
74-13	THE LAST JOURNEY
74-14	FEAST OF DEDICATION
74-15	MINISTRY IN PEREA
74-16	RAISING OF LAZARUS
74-17	THE RICH YOUNG RULER
74-18	PRESENTATION OF THE KING
74-19	CONFLICT WITH AUTHORITY
74-20	THE OLIVET DISCOURSE
74-21	THE LAST PASSOVER
74-22	PREVIEW OF THE CHURCH AGE
74-23	BETRAYAL AND TRIALS
74-24	THE DEATH OF JESUS CHRIST
74-25	RESURRECTION
74-26	HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS – KING JAMES VERSION
74-27	HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS – MODERN PARAPHRASE
74-28	COMPENDIUM OF DOCTRINES

INTRODUCTION

Within the Bible there are many parallels giving different aspects of the same thing. The four Biblical Gospels of course have the same focus, that is, on the person and work of the Lord Jesus Christ. The different authors have a different emphasis on aspects of the story, but have a common story.

As one approaches a harmony of the Gospels the concept adopted is that all Scripture is God Breathed and as the Holy Spirit has put all the books together there is a harmony amongst them all. This can be seen in prophecies in the Old Testament being fulfilled literally centuries later and reported on in the New Testament

By comparing events in the four Gospels simultaneously a more complete picture of the life and work of the Lord Jesus Christ is obtained so that we may more fully appreciate what He has done for us and the magnificence of the Plan of God. That is the focus of this Harmony of the Gospels.

The analysis of the four Gospels will be on a verse by verse basis, examining the key words, background, application and doctrines together with a harmonised version of the King James Version, as well as examining problem areas of so called contradictions. The basic structure of the harmony will be based on that found in the Bible Topic Book which may be modified from time to time after evaluation of parallel texts.

The background notes on the Gospel of John and introduction are adapted from the Diploma in Theology notes in Volumes 8 to 10 of the Diploma Course of the Evangelical Bible College of Western Australia by Dr John McEwan. Our first finding in our review of the Harmony has been to suggest to all our contacts to pray about using the Harmony of the Gospels as part of the Diploma of Theology, rather than just the 110 hours of lectures on the Gospel of John alone. Save that for post-diploma work.

NEW EDITION OF THE HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS WITH PERFECT AND PROPHETIC REVIEW

The 26 volume Harmony of the Gospels was completed in 2004 to 2005 and subsequently reviewed in 2017.

Since 2017 a study of all of the Greek Perfect Tenses in the New Testament has been completed and published.

In addition work has been undertaken where Old Testament Bible Prophecies fulfilled by the Lord Jesus Christ has been examined and divided into two groups, those recorded in the Gospels and those in the rest of the New Testament.

It has been decided that elements of both the Perfect Tense and Prophecy should now be incorporated into the Harmony of the Gospels as it again reinforces the complete validity of the Scriptures as the only complete source of the truth.

The Perfect Tense project has been published in 21 volumes including workbooks, which allow a person not using the KJV to complement and publish the work using their own version.

The upgraded work will be issued in an e-book format as they are completed to form a complete package for Church, group or individual use. We encourage sharing them freely with others as you are led.

We are greatly encouraged as we prepare the contents of the final books already completed as they encourage complete confidence in God's Eternal Plan and joy in the midst of current global events concentrating on the Lord Jesus Christ the Author and Finisher of our Faith. As Christians we are in a unique place of security and can encourage others to consider and accept eternal salvation by faith in Christ.

PERFECT TENSE

We examine the effect of the Perfect Tense in this project. There are nearly 1500 Perfect Greek Tenses in the New Testament.

1. God knows everything from beginning to end, and has in the Scriptures provided the information for humanity to have a permanent relationship with Him in His Eternal Plan, through His work for mankind on the Cross.
2. The basic meaning of the Greek Perfect Tense is that something happens at a point in time, with results that go on forever.

As God knows what goes on forever He has authored the Scriptures for mankind to individually express their volition regarding divine revelation, and so make decisions for their eternal destiny.

3. Everybody born physically exists for ever. We are born physically alive but spiritually dead. We therefore have to accept that we need to be born spiritually; being “born again”. **John 3:6-18, 36.**

4. Being “born again” in Grace through Faith in Christ provides a permanent relationship with God.

5. Those who reject the way of Grace remain alive physically, but by rejecting the staggering grace of the gift of the Cross, God’s perfect grace provision, they must accept that they select the wrath of God to live forever under, rather than grace, and are condemned to having no permanent relationship with God. **John 3:36.**

6. God is totally Just and will always provide sufficient information for all to establish relationship with Him, and does so through the ministries of the Holy Spirit, so that each person can have the grace based relationship with Him; so refusal to accept the way of Grace is rebellion against God, and a direct insult to His provision of the Cross, and His plan.

GOSPELS: MATTHEW, MARK, LUKE, JOHN

1. The four Canonical Gospels are Matthew, Mark, Luke and John. Many false “gospels” were written in the third century but were rejected as the fakes they clearly are. They can be read still today, and fragments of these heretical “gospels” turn up at times, like the so called “gospel of judas” recently. They are nonsense, and rightly rejected by people who seek the “ring of truth”, which is what we find in the Four proven Gospels before us.

2. All were written under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. (**2 Timothy 3:16**), but each writer saw things from a different perspective, and therefore have variations in the things they wrote about.

3. All the Gospels are compatible but the emphasis of the writers is on different characteristics of Jesus Christ.

- | | | |
|------------|------------------------|-----------------------|
| a) Matthew | Christ the King | Written to the Jews |
| b) Mark | Christ the Servant | Written to the Romans |
| c) Luke | Christ the Perfect Man | Written to the Greeks |
| d) John | Christ the Son of God | Written to everybody |

4. The Gospels have equivalents in the four wing creatures in (**Revelation 4:7**) - the living creatures. (cf. **Ezekiel 1:10**)

- | | | |
|------------|---------|------------------|
| a) Matthew | King | Head of a Lion |
| b) Mark | Servant | Head of an Ox |
| c) Luke | Man | Head of a Man |
| d) John | God | Head of an Eagle |

5. The Gospels have equivalents in the four colours of the material of the entrance into the tabernacle. (**Exodus 26:36**)

- | | | |
|------------|---------|----------------------|
| a) Matthew | King | Purple of Royalty |
| b) Mark | Servant | Scarlet of Sacrifice |
| c) Luke | Man | White of Purity |
| d) John | God | Blue of Deity |

e) It should be noted that the colours of the robe of the ephod of the High Priest were purple, scarlet, white and blue.

6. The Gospels have equivalents in the Branch.

- | | |
|------------|--|
| a) Matthew | Branch of David (Isaiah 11:1, Jeremiah 23:5, 33:15) |
| b) Mark | Servant the Branch (Zechariah 3:8) |
| c) Luke | Man whose name is the branch (Zechariah 6:12,13) |
| d) John | Branch of Jehovah (Isaiah 4:2) |

139 CONSPIRACY OF THE RULERS - TREACHERY OF JUDAS**MATTHEW 26:1-5,14-16**

Matthew 26:1 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, 2 Ye **know** that after two days **is** the feast of the passover, and the Son of man **is betrayed** to be crucified. 3 Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, 4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him. 5 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

14 Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests, 15 And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver. 16 And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

KEY WORDS

Came to pass	Ginomai	Came into being [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Finished	Teleo	Finish
All	Pas	All
Sayings	Logos	Word
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Disciples	Mathetes	Disciple
Know	Eido	Know, Perceive [Perfect Active Indicative]
After	Meta	After
Two	Duo	Two
Days	Hemera	Day
Is	Ginomai	Comes into being, Becomes [Perfect Middle Indicative]
Feast	-	Not found in the original
Passover	Pascha	Passover
Son	Uihos	Son
Man	Anthropos	Man
Is betrayed	Paradidomi	Carry to or betray [Perfect Passive Indicative]
To be crucified	Stauroo	Crucify [Aorist Passive Infinitive]
Assembled together	Sunago	Meet together [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Chief Priests	Archiereus	Chief Priest
Scribes	Grammateus	Scribe, Town clerk
Elders	Presbuteros	Elder
People	Laos	People
Palace	Aule	Yard, Courtyard
High Priest	Archiereus	Chief Priest
Called	Lego	Call, Say [Present Passive Participle]
Consulted	Sumbouleuo	Take counsel, Consult [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Might take	Krateo	Lay hand, Hold fast [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Subtilty	Dolos	Trick, Guile
Kill	Apokteino	Kill [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Him	-	Not found in the original
Said	Lego	Say [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Feast day	Heorte	Feast
Lest	Hina Me	That not, Lest
Be	Ginomai	Become, Come into existence [Aorist Middle Subjunctive]
Uproar	Thorubos	Uproar, Tumult
Among	En	In, Among
One	Heis	One
Twelve	Dodeka	Twelve
Called	Lego	Call, Say [Present Passive Participle]
Went unto	Poreuomai	Depart, Go to [Aorist Passive Participle]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Will	Thelo	To desire, Will [Present Active Indicative]

Give	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Will deliver	Paradidomi	Surrender, Deliver up [Future Active Indicative]
Covenanted	Histemi	Covenant, Agree [Aorist Active Indicative]
Thirty	Triakonta	Thirty
Pieces of silver	Argurion	Pieces of Silver
From	Apo	From
That time	Tote	That time
Sought opportunity	Zeteo	Seek [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Opportunity	Eukairia	Favourable Opportunity
Betray	Paradidomi	Carry to or betray [Aorist Active Subjunctive]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS

GINOMAI – TO CAUSE TO BE, MADE, TO COME INTO BEING - Occurs 647 times in the New Testament with 65 times in the Perfect Tense. It is the third most common verb to be in the Perfect Tense after Oida and Grapho. It occurs in this form in 17 different New Testament books, and is almost always in the Active voice. Ginomai often is said to become something or change something from one situation to another. The Perfect Tense should therefore in many cases permanently change situations to demonstrate God’s power or modification of His plan.

In Matthew’s Gospel there are seven verses with Ginomai in the Perfect Tense. In order for the fulfilment of Isaiah 7:14 for the birth the Lord Jesus Christ being a virgin birth, a unique event in the history of **humanity** Matthew 1:22. Due to hardness of man’s heart the rules for divorce are changed, Matthew 19:8. The requirements of a donkey to fulfil Isaiah 62:11, and Zechariah 9:9, need a change of heart of the owners, Matthew 21:4, in order that humanity is not exterminated the days are shortened, Matthew 24:22, the Bridegroom coming will be an unexpected surprise, Matthew 25:6, after two days at the Passover the Son of Man will be delivered up, **Matthew 26:2**, and the arrest of Jesus was done so that the Scriptures could be fulfilled in Matthew 26:56.

OIDA, EIDO – TO KNOW – Occurs 251 times in the Perfect Tense in the New Testament and is by far the largest with Grapho next at 96 occurrences. Because of the mixture of “knows” and “don’t knows” and different characters ranging from the Trinity, through the Disciples of Christ, Religious Leaders, and even to demons the review of this verb is given in each verse it occurs.

PARADIDOMI – BETRAY, DELIVER - Occurs 121 times in the New Testament. **In Matthew 26:2** Jesus said that the Passover is in two days. The Passover was observed at night as the original Passover was at night. Before morning the death angel came to the homes of all who had not got the blood on the door lintels. The Son of Man is the Lord Jesus Christ. He says that the disciples know that He was to be permanently betrayed and crucified. This is in fulfilment of the Prophecy of Psalm 41:9.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED AT THE FIRST COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

ITEM	OLD TESTAMENT	DESCRIPTION	FULFILMENT
139	Zechariah 11:12-13a	Betrayed for 30 pieces of silver	Matthew 26:14-15
	Zechariah 11:12-13b	Rejected	Matthew 26:14-15

REFLECTION

Verse 1. And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, **2** Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified. **3** Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, **4** And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him. **5** But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

The sayings mentioned in verse 1 relate to the Temple and Olivet discourses of Matthew 24 and 25. He said that the Passover is in two days. The Passover was observed at night, from 6pm onwards, as the original Passover was at night. **Exodus 12:2ff.** Before morning the death angel came to the homes of all who had not got the blood on the door lintels. The blood was splattered to form a cross on the door.

The Son of Man is the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of David, and Son of Adam. **Luke 3:38**. He says that the disciples know that He was to be betrayed and crucified. The word “know” is in the perfect tense, which means you know now that it is two days to Passover, with lasting results. They knew as He had told them repeatedly that He would die, but they will only slowly realise that He is indeed the Passover lamb. They know some of the obvious facts, but by their later actions they demonstrate that they do not believe or fully understand, as when the Cross happens they scatter, and it will only be Jesus post-resurrection Bible studies with them that help them understand.

Jesus Christ was the only man who was, or ever has been, eligible and qualified to die for the sins of the world due to His character and perfection. A person under the curse of sin is a slave of sin, and therefore not able to redeem other slaves. All have sinned and come short of the glory of God. The Son of Man talks about the Humanity of Christ while, the Son of God emphasises his Deity. As Immanuel, God-Man He is alone able to achieve our redemption and salvation.

God cannot die. The humanity of Christ died, was buried, rose from the dead, and is now seated as the God-Man at the right hand of the Father. He had to be both Deity and Perfect Humanity – and He was! Christ also had to have tested and perfectly positive freewill to the Plan of God. If He did not, there’s no salvation. Our freewill is just as much a part of the total salvation package as the Sovereignty of God, and the Lord, as the Second Adam achieved all the free will victories needed to overcome the failure of our human ancestor.

The words “to be crucified” is in the aorist passive infinitive. The passive voice showed that Christ received crucifixion and the infinitive indicates that it was God’s purpose that He would be crucified. The aorist tense shows that the time of the crucifixion is taken out of time and perpetuated forever. The perfect tense of the verb translated “betrayed” reminds us that even the negative volition of Judas, and the Chief Priests, and all those involved in the travesty of Justice that occurred, was woven together into the Plan and produced eternal results whereby all saved mankind is blessed in Christ Jesus.

In verses 3-5 we have the plot to kill Jesus Christ. He has condemned religion in very strong terms in the Temple discourses, and in the last week He certainly fully and finally exposed them as corrupt and negative to the Eternal Plan of God. When He had condemned religion He walked out on it, and they reacted, at exactly the right moment, and in their hatred fulfilled the Eternal Plan, for He was to be the Passover Lamb, and He would die at exactly the right moment, at 3pm on the Passover Eve. **Matthew 23:37-24:2**.

The religious group and leaders of Israel comprised three groups, the Chief Priests who were Sadducees, who were rationalists, who followed Greek/Roman culture, the Scribes who were mainly Pharisees, who believed in most of the Old Testament, went to the Temple three times a day, prayed seven times a day, and the Elders, who were generally Herodians, who were a political party who wanted the Herodian monarchy to have ultimate power in Israel, working with the Romans.

The palace of the High Priest had the Atrium or central court gardens, which were surrounded by the house of the High Priests, who lived side by side. They plotted in the open garden where they could not be overheard. They always did their plotting outside in the ancient world so as not to be heard by others.

Caiaphas was the high priest from 18 to 36 AD. He was deposed by Vitellius, who was Roman governor of Syria, and replaced by other corrupt people, but the family of Caiaphas and Annas (his father-in-law) would hold the High Priesthood again later, and all of them would die in the Great Revolt 66-70 AD.

The religious leaders want to take Jesus by subtlety and kill Him quietly, without riot. The word consult means to plot. To betray means to point out the person, and stand in court and witness against them. Judas never got to court, for he committed suicide. The attitude of religion to grace is a desire to kill the righteous – by their fruits we know them.... **Matthew 7:13-23, Galatians 5:19-21**.

In verse 5, they say not to kill the Lord on the Feast Day, in case there is an uprising of the people. They want to get rid of Jesus without causing a revolution – they are focused on their own very temporary power and wealth, not the truth of the matter before them, and the perfect tense reminds us of the eternal consequences of their actions this week, for they will all pay the price in time with violent deaths at the hands of the Zealots, and in eternity with eternal judgment, in the company of Satan and his demons forever.

Verse 14. Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests, 15. And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver. 16. And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

The word “covenanted” means to make a deal/bargain. Judas knew where to go to betray the Lord Jesus Christ; and so he went to the religious leaders rather than the Romans. The Sanhedrin constantly rejected Christ, and were always trying to kill Him, and their hatred had grown to fever pitch this week.

Judas is one of the disciples. “What will ye” means, what do you desire to give me? I will deliver or betray Him to you for a price. They haggled over it, as the chief priests want to minimise the money they are going to spend. They come to an agreement, at 30 pieces of silver which is the price of the freedom of a slave, and was a considerable sum of money, enough to later buy a piece of land for the burial of strangers.

From that time onwards, Judas sought the opportunity to betray Him, but the Lord makes it difficult for him, right up to the moment that is the correct one for the Plan to be fulfilled. The tense of the verb to seek to betray indicates that Judas is constantly seeking for a time to betray the Lord from that time on. Right up to the time of the Passover there was no opportunity – his free will is being expressed, but it is all woven into the eternal plan of God, and God’s Plan cannot and will not fail!!!!

MARK 14:1-2,10-11

1 After two days was the feast of the passover, and of unleavened bread: and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. 2 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar of the people.

10 And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them. 11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

KEY WORDS

Two	Duo	Two
Days	Hemera	Day
Was	Eimi	Is [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Feast	-	Not found in the original
Passover	Pascha	Passover
Unleavened bread	Azumos	Unleavened bread
Chief priests	Archiereus	Chief Priest
Scribes	Grammateus	Scribe, Town clerk
Sought	Zeteo	Seek [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Might take	Krateo	Lay hand, Hold fast [Aorist Active Participle]
Craft	Dolos	Trick, Guile
Put to death	Apokteino	Kill [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Him	-	Not found in the original
Said	Lego	Say [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Feast day	Heorte	Feast
Lest	Me Pote	Not ever
Be	Eimi	Be [Future Middle Indicative]
Uproar	Thorubos	Uproar, Tumult
People	Laos	People
One	Heis	One
Twelve	Dodeka	Twelve
Went	Aperchomai	Go to [Aorist Active Indicative]
Betray	Paradidomi	Carry to or betray [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Heard	Akouo	Hear [Aorist Active Participle]
Were glad	Chairo	Rejoice [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Promised	Epaggello	Promise [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Give	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Money	Argurion	Silver coins
Sought	Zeteo	Seek [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Might Conveniently	Eukairos	Conveniently, Opportunely
Betray	Paradidomi	Carry to or betray [Aorist Active Subjunctive]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED AT THE FIRST COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

ITEM	OLD TESTAMENT	DESCRIPTION	FULFILMENT
139	Psalm 38:12	Enemies try to entangle Him by craft	Mark 14:1

REFLECTION

Verse 1. After two days was the feast of the passover, and of unleavened bread: and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death. **2.** But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar of the people.

The chief priests were under the Sadducees control in those days and they make a conspiracy with the Pharisees under the leadership of Caiaphas. They need to find a way to arrest Jesus while He is away from the multitudes. They could not solve the problem until Judas came. He will solve the problem for them, but not outside of God's Plan.

If Christ had died at that time, i.e. any time other than Passover, and in any way other than crucifixion, there would have been no Atonement. The death of Christ was important and necessary for the Atonement but the timing and method was laid out in God's Plan in the Old Testament. He had to die at a specific time, at the Passover and in a specific way, by crucifixion. God's Plan is always a plan of detail!

This is also the reason why we have seen a number of occasions where Satan had tried to have Jesus killed prematurely. However at the Passover Jesus will force their hand and they have no choice but to act on the very night that they and Satan didn't want to act. Satan isn't as smart or powerful as he wants mankind to believe.

Verse 10. And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them. **11.** And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

Though Judas had lived with the Lord Jesus Christ for at least three years, and had received nothing but kindness from him, he now goes out to the chief priests with a guarantee to betray the Son of God into their hands, knowing it will lead to his death. They seized the offer gladly offering to pay him for his treachery. All he had to do now was to work out the details.

Was Judas trying to force Jesus' hand, to get him to become political and seize power? Was he trying by betrayal to get the political solution he wanted as a Sicarri? Remember his name, for he was a member of the dagger carriers, the Sicarri = Iscariot. Was the devious dealing, and the money worked out by hard negotiating, all just a ruse to fool the Chief Priests, who he later planned to kill, when Jesus did seize political power? He would later throw the money at their feet in contempt at them and at what he had done, so it is not clear what his motivation was at all!

What is clear, he was not ready to walk with Jesus on His path to the Cross and do things God's way! Judas felt he had a better plan, and if he needed to force Jesus hand, then he felt he could try to do that. Sadly, whatever his motivation, he was thinking satanic thoughts, and he never repented of them and sought forgiveness and salvation, and so he has joined all those fellow plotters that he despised and hated.

LUKE 22:1-6

1 Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover. **2** And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people. **3** Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. **4** And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them. **5** And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money. **6** And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

KEY WORDS

Feast	Heorte	Feast
Unleavened Bread	Azumos	Unleavened bread
Drew nigh	Eggizo	Approach, Come near [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Called	Lego	Call [Present Passive Participle]
Passover	Pascha	Passover
Chief Priests	Archiereus	Chief Priests
Scribes	Grammateus	Scribe, Town Clerk
Sought	Zeteo	Seek [Imperfect Active Indicative]
How	Pos	What manner
Might Kill	Anaiero	Kill, Slay, Take away [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Feared	Phobeo	Fear [Imperfect Middle Indicative]
People	Laos	People
Entered	Eiserchomai	Enter in [Aorist Active Indicative]
Satan	Satanas	Accuser, Devil, Satan
Surnamed	Epikaleomai	Surnamed [Present Passive Participle]
Being	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Participle]
Number	Arithmos	Number
Twelve	Dodeka	Twelve
Went his way	Aperchomai	Depart [Aorist Active Participle]
Communed	Sullaleo	Talk together [Aorist Active Indicative]
Captains	Strategos	Military governor, General, Captain
Might betray	Paradidomi	Might betray [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Were glad	Chairo	Rejoice [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Covenanted	Suntithemai	Concur, Agree [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Give	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Money	Argurion	Silver coins
Promised	Exomologeoo	Promise [Aorist Active Indicative]
Sought	Zeteo	Seek [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Opportunity	Eukairia	Occasion, Opportunity
Betray	Paradidomi	Betray [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Absence	Ater	Without, In the absence of
Multitude	Ochlos	Multitude, Crowds

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 1. Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover. **2.** And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people. **3.** Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. **4.** And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them. **5.** And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money. **6.** And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

Luke recorded that the death of Christ occurred at the time of the Passover, the annual celebration of the time lambs had been slain in Egypt, when God spared the Israelites but punished the Egyptians. **Exodus 12:1-28.**

The Feast of Unleavened Bread here refers to the period beginning with the Passover and extending for seven further days during which no leavened bread was eaten. The Passover was held on the 14th of the month of Nisan, the first month of the Jewish year. The days of Unleavened Bread started from the fourteenth of the month, Passover, into the 15th from 6pm Passover day's second evening in Jewish thinking (first Holy Day of Unleavened Bread) to the 21st and they were known all as the days of the Feast of Unleavened Bread.

This includes also the “Feast of Firstfruits”, on the first Sunday of Unleavened Bread also, but in verse 1 the name the whole Passover-First-fruits season takes is the Feast of Unleavened Bread. If Luke had been writing primarily to the Jews, it would not have been necessary for him to mention the connection between the Feast of Unleavened Bread and the Passover and First-Fruits.

The religious leaders were afraid of the people, but we’re still trying to get rid of Jesus, rather than sit with the truth and accept its claims. The initiative for the betrayal rested with Judas. Satan entered Judas and he was willing to betray Jesus for money. Satan’s taking part in Jesus’ death was actually his own downfall for through dying Jesus conquered Satan, and his twin tools of sin and death. **Colossians 2:15, Hebrews 2:14.**

Satan entered Judas, this action having said to have taken place after Jesus had handed him the piece of bread during the Passover meal. This marked the last refusal of God’s grace by Judas. We conclude therefore that either this took place in successive stages or that Luke is emphasizing the fact of the action of rejection on Judas part rather than the exact time when it took place.

In verses 4-6 we see Judas make a bargain with the chief priests and captains, the commanders of the Jewish temple guard. He had carefully worked out a plan, by which he could betray Jesus into their hands without causing a riot. The plan was entirely acceptable to them and they agreed to give him money namely 30 pieces of silver as we saw in Matthew. So Judas left to work out the details of his treacherous scheme, but a plot that was still well within the eternal Plan of God.

APPLICATION

The plan of God goes on in detail and on schedule throughout the history of man. Neither men nor angels are able to manipulate the Plan of God.

As believers were are in the Plan of God and should always be ready to acquiesce to His will in our life. God’s will for our lives is far superior to even our best plans.

Materialism and the lust for money have caused the downfall of many. Money is transient while the Plan of God has eternal implications.

Religion always attempts to gag or destroy the truth. It is more interested in keeping its vested interest than the eternal effect of their actions on those who are seeking to be led by God.

Demon possession occurs to unbelievers such as Judas, but cannot occur to believers because greater is He that is in you [The Holy Spirit] than he that is in the world [Satan]. **1 John 4:4.** Only final rejection of the Holy Spirit’s ministries opens the door to the demonic.

Judas is paid at the temple treasury. The purpose of this treasury was the purchase of the sacrifice. Little do they know that this is what they are doing, and they cannot take the money back, so it becomes the funds to buy the very land they will bury Judas in, and during the siege where the bodies of the people in the city will be thrown. There is a terrible price for their rebellion.

PROPHECY

30 PIECES OF SILVER and THE POTTER’S FIELD

The 30 pieces of silver which was the price that was agreed to was almost the price of an insult because this was the value of the dead slave. In **Exodus 21:32** it states that if a an ox gores a male or female slave the owner of the bull shall pay the slave owner 30 shekels of silver and the ox will be killed.

To the Jews therefore 30 pieces of silver became of the price of contempt and it is used as such in **Zechariah 11:12** below. In that verse Zechariah is asked to play the role of the Messiah and feed of the sheep. After a period of feeding the sheep he presents himself to the leaders and says “if you think my work is worthy pay me, if you do not think it is worthy don’t pay me”. They give him after consideration his value of 30 pieces silver. It would have been better that they had decided to give him nothing because 30 pieces of silver was the price of contempt. In verse 13 God says to Zechariah take the 30 pieces of silver and cast it into the potters, this lordly price at which I was valued by them. So it was not Zechariah who is valued at 30 pieces of silver but God who is sold out for the price of contempt.

Zechariah 11:12,13 (487 BC): "And I said unto them, If ye think good, give me my price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver. 13 And the LORD said unto me, Cast it unto the potter: a goodly price that I was prised at of them. And I took the thirty pieces of silver, and cast them to the potter in the house of the LORD."

FULFILMENT

Matthew 27:3-10 (32 AD): "Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, 4 Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that. 5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. 6 And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood. 7 And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. 8 Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day. 9 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value; 10 And gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me."

1. The betrayal price that would be paid for our Lord was stated in Zechariah. It was 30 pieces of silver.
2. It is of note that Joseph was sold into slavery in Egypt by his brethren for 20 pieces of silver (Genesis 37:28). Joseph in many ways is an antitype of Christ
3. Zechariah, under the guidance of the Holy Spirit also foresaw a problem with Judas' repentance and the return of the money to the Temple treasury.
4. Judas repented [METAMELOMAI]: he felt sorry for what he had done, but this repentance was not for salvation. Another Greek word translated repentance [METANOEO], means to change one's mind. This was the one always associated with salvation.
5. The temple government in the form of the chief priests, had difficulties in knowing what to do with the blood money, as they were unable to accept it back into the Temple treasury, so they purchased a potter's field for the burial of strangers.
6. This fulfilled Zechariah 11:12, 13. Allusion is also made to the potter's field in Jeremiah 18:1-4 and 19:1-3.
7. The land purchased was called the field of blood or Akeldama in Acts 1:19. It was located south of Jerusalem at the junction of the valleys of Kidron and Hinnom.
8. Excavations in the area have shown first century graves, which confirm that the potter's field was used for the purposes for which it was bought.

DOCTRINES

ISRAEL - FEASTS OF ISRAEL

1. In the Jewish calendar, seven Holy Feasts were ordained by God for the Jews to follow, and to be a sign to all believers.
2. In order the feasts were:-
 - a) Passover
 - b) Unleavened Bread
 - c) First Fruits
 - d) Pentecost
 - e) Trumpets

- f) Atonement
- g) Tabernacles

3. THE PASSOVER (**Deuteronomy 16:1-8, Leviticus 23:5**)

Historically

- a) This feast originated on the night when the angel of the Lord passed over the land of Egypt immediately prior to the children of Israel leaving their bondage under Moses.
- b) A male lamb without blemish was killed on the 14th Nisan having been brought into the house 4 days before, great care being taken that not a bone in its body was broken. (**Exodus 12:1-6**)
- c) The lamb was roasted, eaten with bitter herbs and any portion left was burnt. (**Exodus 12:7-10**)
- d) In the original Passover the blood of the Lamb was daubed on the doorposts and lintels, any such house being spared from the last plague against Egypt. (**Exodus 12:21-28**) All plagues were against the gods of Egypt.
- e) The Passover was on the anniversary of the promise to Abraham. (**Exodus 12:41**)

Fulfilment

- a) The sacrificial lamb represents the Lord Jesus Christ. (**1 Corinthians 5:7**)
- b) Christ died on the 14th Nisan on the cross having entered Jerusalem, the Holy city 4 days before on the 10th Nisan.
- c) When the Roman soldiers broke the legs of the thieves they found Jesus dead so no bone in His body was broken. (**John 19:32, 33**)
- d) The roasting of the lamb represents judgment, the bitter herbs representing sins or failures.
- e) The eating of the lamb represents faith in the work of Christ i.e. eating and drinking at the communion table.)
- f) By faith in Christ we are protected from the final judgment of God. (**Romans 8:1**)

Currently

- a) Each time we celebrate the Lord's supper we are looking back to the cross and the work of the Lord Jesus Christ. (**1 Corinthians 11:23-26**)
- b) This could also represent salvation to the believer.

4. UNLEAVENED BREAD (**Leviticus 23:6-8**)

- a) This feast lasted for seven days starting on the 15th Nisan and portrays the provision and fellowship with God.
- b) The bread was unleavened due to the need to leave Egypt with utmost haste. In addition the wine was without leaven or alcohol - the wine being boiled during this feast. This has been found in Chaldean army instructions when it was feared that the Jews could revolt during the time of unleavened bread if they were served with alcoholic Chaldean beer.
- c) As God can have nothing to do with sin God's provision is without leaven as leaven represents evil in the scriptures.
- d) There are various forms of leaven in the Bible:-
 - i) Leaven of the Sadducees - human viewpoint. (**Matthew 16:6**)
 - ii) Leaven of the Pharisees - ritualism (**Mark 8:15**)
 - iii) Leaven of Herod - worldliness (**Mark 8:15**)
 - iv) Leaven of the Corinthians - wantonness (**1 Corinthians 5:6, 7**)
 - v) Leaven of the Galatians - legalism (**Galatians 5:9**)
- e) Bread made without leaven shows the perfection of Christ. (**Leviticus 2:11**)
- f) This could represent the Christian walk for the believer.
- g) The unleavened bread was cooked on a griddle which caused the bread to have stripes. It also had holes. By his stripes we are healed (**Isaiah 53:5**) They will look upon him whom they have pierced. (**Zechariah 12:10**)

5. FIRST FRUITS (**Leviticus 23:9-14**)

- a) This feast always occurred on a Sunday and was celebrated on the 17th Nisan.
- b) This feast portrayed the resurrection of Christ and occurred half-way through the feast of Unleavened Bread.
- c) Christ is said to be the first fruits of them that sleep. (**1 Corinthians 15:20**)
- d) Christ rose 3 days after his death on the Passover.
- e) The Jews crossed the Red Sea 3 days after leaving bondage.
- f) The ark rested on Ararat on this very day after the flood. (**Genesis 8:4**)
- g) This could represent the resurrection body for the believer.

6. PENTECOST (Leviticus 23:15-21)

- a) Pente - fifty - this occurred always on a Sunday 50 days or a week of weeks after the first fruits, generally in May or June. **(Leviticus 23:15)**
- b) It represents the dispersion of the Jews which occurred historically in AD 70 and there followed a long gap to the next feast representing the long time the Jews would be out of the land.
- c) Pentecost in the year of the crucifixion was the day on which the Church age started with the baptism of the Holy Spirit in Jerusalem. **(Acts 2:1-4)**.
- d) At Pentecost, 3,000 were born again; at the giving of the law, 3,000 were killed.

7. TRUMPETS (Leviticus 23:23, 24)

- a) This occurred in September, the blowing of the trumpets representing the coming of the king. It is the Jewish New Year Day.
- b) This represents the return of the Lord Jesus Christ for his Church at the Rapture. The Jews recognise this as the day on which God would again have a relationship with the Jews.

8. ATONEMENT (Leviticus 23:26-32)

- a) This occurred ten days after the feast of trumpets. It represents the fact that believing Jews only enter into the Millennium.
- b) From evaluation of **(Daniel 12:11-12)** and parallel passages it is apparent that there is a period of judgment at the second advent of some 45 days. This is a period of the wheat and tares, the sheep and the goats. The unbelievers are baptised with fire. **(Matthew 3:11,12.)** The believers enter the Millennium.
- c) This was the only day of the year that the high priest was able to enter the Holy of Holies bringing a bowl of blood, once for himself and once for the nation. **(Hebrews 9:6-7)**. His entry represents the sacrifice of Christ.
- d) Christ's sacrifice is the fulfilment of this ritual. Christ only had to make one offering, as he was sinless, for the sins of the world. **(Hebrews 9:11-14)** On the feast of Atonement red wool, the Atonement Lot, was tied to the temple pillar. After the blood was spilt the lot turned white until the time of the cross. Afterwards it stayed red. This sign showed Christ's once and for all sacrifice.

9. TABERNACLES (Leviticus 23:33-36)

This occurred five days after the feast of Atonement and lasted a week. It represents the Millennial reign of Christ and the perfect provision and environment provided. **(Deuteronomy 16:13-15, Romans 8:19-22)**

10. It is of interest that the two feasts that speak of God's perfect provision - Unleavened Bread and Tabernacles - were a week duration whilst the others were for a day, speaking of a point in time occurrence such as the crucifixion, resurrection or rapture of the Church.

11. SUMMARY

- a) PASSOVER fulfilled at The Crucifixion on Passover AD 32
- b) UNLEAVENED BREAD fulfilled at Burial of Christ on Unleavened Bread AD 32
- c) FIRST-FRUITS fulfilled at Resurrection of Christ on First-Fruits AD 32
- d) PENTECOST fulfilled at End of Jewish Age on Pentecost AD 32
- e) TRUMPETS to be fulfilled at Rapture of Church
- f) ATONEMENT to be fulfilled at Second Advent of Christ
- g) TABERNACLES to be fulfilled at Millennial reign of Christ

12. As Paul had seen the literal fulfilment of the first four feasts in some 8 weeks in AD 32 it is hardly surprising that he would expect to be in the "rapture generation" **(1 Thessalonians 4:13-18, 2 Thessalonians 2:1)**

JUDAS - BETRAYAL

1. SCRIPTURE **Matthew 26:14-16, 25; 27:3-10. Mark 14:1-11. Luke 22:3-6. John 12:3-6; 13:2, 27-30, Acts 1:18, 19.**

2. BIOGRAPHY

Judas was one of the twelve disciples of Jesus Christ. He was the son of Simon **(John 6:71, 12:4)** and was known as Judas Iscariot. Iscariot indicates that he was from Kerioth which was located in Moab **(Jeremiah 48:24, 41 Amos 2:2)** or Kerioth Hezron **(Joshua 15:25)** which was situated 20 kilometres south of Hebron. Judas was the treasurer **(John 13:29)** and was also a thief **(John 12:6)**.

It was Judas who criticised Mary when she anointed the Lord with precious ointment (**John 12 3-5**). The ointment he saw as a source of income. His avarice eventually became so overpowering that he conspired with the religious leaders of the time to betray Jesus. He did not understand the whole implications of his action because when he saw what the authorities were doing to Jesus Christ, he felt sorry for his actions and eventually committed suicide (**Acts 1:18,19**).

3. EVALUATION

- a) Judas always appeared last on the list of disciples (**Mark 3:14-19**).
- b) He was described as a traitor (Luke 6:16) and betrayer (**Matthew 10:4**).
- c) Judas was an unbeliever who did not address Jesus as Lord (Kurios) but Rabbi - Teacher (**Matthew 26:25**).
- d) At Simon the leper's house, Mary came and anointed the feet of Jesus with ointment while they were eating (**Mark 14:3**).
- e) The disciples, led by Judas, complained about the waste of money, estimating it at a year's salary (**Mark 14:5**).
- f) After this Judas left to barter with the chief priests to betray Jesus (**Mark 14:10, 11; Zechariah 11:12; Exodus 21:32**).
- g) At the last supper, Jesus gave Judas his last chance to be saved when he offered the sop, a portion of food reserved for honoured guests (**John 13:26**).
- h) Judas rejected Jesus and was then indwelt by Satan (**John 13:27**). He then went to betray Jesus.
- i) Judas betrayed Jesus with a kiss (**Matthew 26:47-50**).
- j) When Judas saw that Jesus was to be condemned he felt sorry (Metamelomai, Gk.) for what he had done (**Matthew 27:3**) but did not repent (Metanoeo, Gk.) or change his mind about Jesus Christ (**2 Corinthians 7:10**).
- k) He went and hanged himself (**Matthew 27:5**) and his body fell into the Kidron Valley (**Acts 1:18, 19**), at Alcadema - the field of blood (**Zechariah 11:12, 13**).

4. PRINCIPLES

- a) We should not doubt the Lord's sincerity in calling Judas to be a disciple. Jesus appealed to Judas on many occasions to believe in Him (**2 Peter 3:9**).
- b) Jesus' fore-knowledge does not imply fore-ordination that Judas must become the traitor.
- c) Judas was never a true believer. He remained a son of perdition (**John 17:12**).
- d) Unbelievers are called the sons of Satan (**John 8:44**).
- e) He was lost because he was never truly saved (**John 3:36**).
- f) Judas is an awful warning of the future for the unconverted follower of Jesus (**Romans 8:9b**).
- g) He was doomed and damned because he chose to be, and God confirmed him in that choice (**Matthew 26:14-25**).
- h) The love of money is the root of all evil (**1 Timothy 6:10**).
- i) Feeling sorry for your sins does not save; it is a change to belief in Christ (**Hebrews 12:16, 17**).
- j) Religious apostates reject the truth and will dispose of collaborators as soon as they are no longer useful to them (**Revelation 17:16**).
- k) The unbeliever ends his life in misery (e.g. suicide) (**Psalms 37:38; Psalm 73:17, 18**).

JUDAS - OUTLINE OF JUDAS' LIFE

1. His Opportunities

- a) He was from the tribe of Judah (**John 6:71**)
- b) He was called by Christ. (**Luke 6:16**)
- c) He was one of the twelve (**Matthew 10:4**)
- d) He was treasurer of the disciples. (**John 12:6**)
- e) He was present at the Last Supper. (**John 13:26**)

2. His Sowing

- a) He was covetous. (**John 12:4-6**)
- b) He was a thief. (**John 12:6**)
- c) He was Satan possessed. (**Luke 22:3**)
- d) He bargained to betray Jesus. (**Mark 14:10, 11**)
- e) He was bribed to become a traitor. (**Matthew 26:14-16**)

3. His Reaping
 - a) His repentance. (**Matthew 27:3**)
 - b) His act of restitution. (**Matthew 27:4**)
 - c) His death. (**Matthew 27:5, Acts 1:18**)
 - d) His curse. (**Acts 1:20**)
 - e) His replacement. (**1 Corinthians 15:7-10**)

PRIESTS

1. A priest is a man who represents himself or other men before God.
2. There are three categories of priesthood in human history:
 - a) Family priest - from Adam until Levi
 - b) Levitical priesthood. - appointed under the Law of Moses
 - c) Royal priesthood
 - i) Melchizedek - king of Jerusalem, but also priest of the Most High (**Genesis 14:18**)
 - ii) Jesus Christ - King of kings and the Great High Priest (**Hebrews 10:17**)
 - iii) Church Age believer - we share Christ's priesthood, since we are united with Him (**1 Peter 2:9**)
3. Until the Law was given the head of each family was the priest for that family. (**Genesis 8:20, 26:25, 31:54**)
4. When the Law was proposed the whole nation of Israel was to be "a kingdom of priests unto God". The nation of Israel however failed in unbelief.
5. God appointed Aaron and his family in the tribe of Levi as a specialised priesthood (**Exodus 28:1**)
6. All believers in the Church Age have become a kingdom of priests in Christ (**1 Peter 2:9, Revelation 1:6**)
7. The chief privilege of being a priest is to be able to approach God directly. (**Hebrews 4:14-16, 10:19-22**)
8. In their role as a priest the believer offers:-
 - a) Their own body. (**Romans 12:1, Philippians 2:17**)
 - b) Praise to God. (**Hebrews 13:15-16**)
 - c) Their possessions. (**Romans 12:13, Galatians 6:6**)
 - d) Intercession on behalf of others. (**Colossians 4:12, 1 Timothy 2:1**)
9. The priest must be a partaker of the nature of the people he represents. Jesus Christ had to be a human too. (**Hebrews 5:1, 7:4, 5, 7:14-28, 10:5, 10:10-14**)
10. Comparison of the priesthoods
 - a) The Melchizedek priesthood was a picture of the priesthood of Christ (**Psalms 110:4; Hebrews 5:6, 10:6:20; 7:1-28**)
 - b) The Levitical Priesthood
 - i) Was based on the Law, which could not save
 - ii) Was based on physical birth into the family of Aaron
 - iii) Was available only to the family of Aaron
 - iv) The priests came from the tribe of Levi. The kings came from the tribe of Judah. No person could be a priest and a king.
 - v) Was based on mere men, with their own weaknesses and sin
 - vi) Ended when the priest died
 - c) The Royal Priesthood of Christ
 - i) Is based on Christ's sacrifice, which took away all sin for all time
 - ii) Is based on spiritual birth, being born again into the family of God
 - iii) Is universal to all believers in the Church Age
 - iv) It is a royal priesthood - because of the Kingship and Priestly office of Jesus Christ
 - v) Is based on the perfect person of Christ
 - vi) Is eternal, since Christ lives forever

PRIESTS – LEVITICAL PRIESTHOOD

1. Aaron was the first appointed High Priest in the Levitical priesthood. (**Exodus 28:1, Numbers 18:7, 8**).
2. In the Levitical priesthood sons followed their father by physical birth into the priesthood.
3. Any descendants of Aaron who had physical defects were eliminated (**Leviticus 21:21-23**)
4. The function of the Levitical priesthood
 - a) To teach the law (**Leviticus 10:11**)
 - b) To offer the sacrifices (**Leviticus 9**)
 - c) Maintain the tabernacle. (**Numbers 18:3**) (Levites)
 - d) To function in the Holy Place where they changed the shewbread and trimmed the candlestick. (**Exodus 30:7-8, Leviticus 24:5-8**)
 - e) They inspected diseased persons in order to declare them unclean. (**Leviticus 13, 14**)
 - f) They acted as the supreme court of the land and judged major controversies. (**Deuteronomy 17:8, 19:17, 21:5**)
 - g) Priestly blessings. (**Numbers 6:22**)
5. Some priests also received the office of prophet. Eg - Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Zechariah.
6. The tribe of Levi
 - a) The Levites descended from Levi who was chosen by God for the care and protection of holy things. (**Numbers 3:5 ff, 8:14-19**)
 - b) The first-born of all tribes of Israel were consecrated to the Lord. They were ransomed back by five shekels of silver, this money paying for the tribe of Levi who were their representatives.
 - c) The period of service for the Levites was from 25 to 50 years of age because of the tremendous pressures of being involved in spiritual activity.
 - d) The function of the Levites:-
 - i) To preserve the law, transmit it for posterity, constantly writing out the scripture. (**Leviticus 10:11, Nehemiah 8:9, Ezekiel 44:23**)
 - ii) They were to assist the priests in the service of the tabernacle and later the temple. (**Numbers 18:4**)
 - iii) There were two tasks that were not done by the Levites. The hewing of wood and fetching of the water by the Gibeonites. (**Joshua 9:21**) The gatekeepers. (**1 Chronicles 26:1, 19**)
 - iv) Classification of the Levites:-
Kohath responsible for the ark, table of shewbread, the two altars, the lamp stand, the sacred vessel and the veil. Gershon, for the coverings, hangings from the tabernacle, the doors. Meran, for the planks, the bars, the pillars, the sockets, the pins and the cords.
 - v) The Levites were responsible for the transportation of the tabernacle.
 - vi) The Levites were also responsible for all the music.
7. Dress of the High Priest (**Exodus 28**)
Except on ceremonial occasions, the dress of the priests and the high priest was no different from that of the common people. On ceremonial occasions the High Priest's uniform consisted of the following: white linen shorts, a white linen coat approximately hip length, a belt in the same colour as the curtains - white, blue, scarlet and purple, a turban-like cap with a golden crown inscribed 'Holy to Jehovah' (his badge of rank), an ephod of blue lavishly embroidered with colours, a breastplate of gold and cloth with the twelve stones representing the tribes engraved with their names and fastened with gold clasp. (see Priestly Garments).
8. The consecration of the priests and High Priests described in (**Exodus 29**)
9. The Day of Atonement (**Leviticus 16**) On that high holy day, the high priest donned his ceremonial robes and entered the Tabernacle where he sprinkled the blood of the bullock of the sin offering for himself over the top of the mercy seat. (v6, 14).

If he emerged from the Holy of Holies his priesthood was assured for another year. He re-entered a second time with the blood of the goat of the sin offering for the people to do likewise for them. His return to the Israelites signified that he had obtained national pardon. The people of Israel were spared. (v30).

10. The descendants of the High Priest

a) Succession occurred upon the officiating high priest's death with the eldest surviving son's installation. (**Numbers 20:28**)

b) The line was promised to pass down through Phinehas eldest son of Eleazer, the son of Aaron. (**Numbers 25:10-13**). Eli was a legitimate priest and descendant of Ithmar, but not an high priest; the switch in the time took place during Saul's reign. It was rightfully restored to the line of Eleazer during Solomon's reign. (**1 Kings 2:26, 27, 35**).

When Israel was about to go under dispersion in Jeremiah's day, Seraiah was the corrupt high priest. He was captured by Nebuzar-adam and executed at Riblah. (**2 Kings 25:18-21**).

His son Josedech, who should have inherited the office, never served as high priest but lived and died in captivity at Babylon. (**Haggai 1:1-14**). His son Joshua assumed the office when the High Priesthood was restored in the days of Zechariah and Zerubbabel. (**Zechariah 3.**)

c) His successors were Jothum, Eliashia, Joiada, Johanan and Jaddua, who served in time of Alexander the Great. He met Alexander's conquering army with a scroll of Daniel in his hand. By reading him those passages dealing with him Jaddua won Alexander's friendship for the Jews.

d) Jaddua's successors were Onias I and Simon the Just. Onias II, too young to become the high priest, was set aside in favour of Simon's brother Eleazer.

e) The high priesthood was passed down to the Asmonaeon family of the course (class or order) of Jojarits. (**1 Chronicles 9:10, 24:7, Nehemiah 11:10**) and continued in that line until Herod the Great destroyed that family, the last high priest, Aristobul being murdered by order of Herod (Herod the Great's brother in law) in 35 BC

f) There were twenty-eight high priests until the year 70 AD Two high priests related to the death of Christ were Caiaphas and Annas.

GOD: DIVINE INSTITUTIONS – FREEWILL

1. Definition :- Volition or free will is the responsibility before God to choose different ends and means in life.
2. The above definition does not say that one has the power to do what you choose but it does give the opportunity to choose.
3. God gave Adam a choice in the garden in (**Genesis 2:16,17**) where God told the man "thou shalt not eat" in the imperative mood which is a command.
4. Free will gives you the opportunity to want to accomplish things in conformity with God's will without having the natural ability to do so. (**1 Kings 3:5-10**) Solomon in this case wanted to judge but could not because of his own limitations.
5. In (Psalm 13) David's free will continued to be positive even though he had not been successful.
6. One of the reasons for the delay in the answering of prayer requests is to allow the strengthening of free will to desire to do God's will.
7. Free will in both believer and unbeliever. (**John 7:17**)
8. Free will in giving. (**2 Corinthians 8:12**)
9. Free will cannot be coerced or compromised thus Christianity is a matter of obedience. (**2 Corinthians 5:10**)
10. As God is to judge all men it means that man is responsible for his actions and that all normal members of the human race have free will. (**Revelation 20:11-15**)

11. Relationship of free will is vertical, between man and God not man and man. (**Ephesians 6:5-9**)
12. Because man is subject to judgment there is an age of accountability as portrayed by the "rich young ruler".
13. Animals and plants are not judged.
14. Free will also puts the responsibility on both ends and means. An example of the right end but wrong means is the sin unto death of Moses. (**Numbers 20**)
15. By application just because God is blessing a ministry, in the case of Moses by providing water it does not mean that the person is necessarily in God's will. God blesses through his grace and not necessarily because they are doing things by God's way.
16. Human viewpoint attack on free will - Determinism.
- The concept is that if one starts out with any physical item and I know everything there is regarding it and the laws that control it then I can dogmatically predict the future state of that item.
 - This concept is incorrect as shown by the power of prayer (**James 5:17**).
 - It is possible for God to manipulate His universe. (**Acts 16:26**).
17. Types of miracles in the Bible
- natural - a variation of a natural law
 - Elijah and the drought
 - Paul and the earthquake
 - Moses at the Red Sea with the east wind
 - supernatural - a direct violation of a natural law
 - The resurrection of Christ
 - Being born again
18. In physics this concept is called "Heisenburg's Uncertainty Principle" after the German Nobel prize winner who postulated it.

Modern science now views a lot of the formulae of physics as occurring the vast majority of times but on odd occasions not complying with observed laws. Such non compliance would include miracles or manipulation by God.

19. Evolution is an attack on free will as it states that man is evolved from animals and is a higher form of animal. This is often reinforced in text books which state "men and the other animals" indicating that man differs in degree only and not in "kind".
- "Difference in degree" - hot and cold is a matter of relative heat; ice, water and steam are all water and of the same kind.
 - "Difference in kind - a square and a triangle.
 - Solomon in (**Ecclesiastes 3:21**), a believer out of fellowship assesses man as different only in degree from animals.
 - Based on evolutionary principles abortion can be justified and atrocities condoned against other races such as the Nazi reaction to Jews, gipsies and the Slavs. From this comes the concept that if we knew everything about animal behaviour we could then describe man.
 - The Biblical view however is that we do vary in kind, not in degree (**Genesis 2:16**) with the thing that sets man apart from the animals being volition.
 - By implication man is never totally determined by his environment.
 - Hell is a monument to the fact of free will because if you do not have a choice you cannot be judged.
20. Three problems which the Bible solves regarding free will -
- What about babies who die before they hear the gospel or those who are mentally unable to decide?

Solution - (**2 Samuel 12:18**) where a child born to David and Bathsheba dies on the 7th day, the day before circumcision which would have brought the child into a covenant relationship.

David says that he will go to be with the child indicating the child has been automatically saved without a covenant requirement.

This is the principle of "unlimited atonement". **(1 John 2:2)**

- (b) What about the physical damage which hinders the person causing a restriction of free will ?

Solution - **(John 9:1-7)** where a man blind from birth is healed. Jesus did not bypass the free will but made up for the blindness. He breaks down the barriers for a person to do God's will but the free will of the person is not manipulated.

- (c) What about spiritual damage to free will ?

Solution - **(Genesis 3:8)** where after the fall God sought out Adam and Eve in the garden where they had hidden from him. God who is all knowing asked the question "Where are you ?"

The principle of the "total depravity of man" is seen here in the fact that man will not of his own free will seek God.

In (Deuteronomy 5) Moses and all the Israelites heard a public address by God which the Israelites shrank back from.

God speaks to man in three areas:-

- (a) He speaks to all men. **(Matthew 5:45, Acts 14:17)**
- (b) He has a more intense form of calling. **(Genesis 6:3, Romans 13:1)**
- (c) He calls through the gospel of Jesus Christ. **(John 16:8-11)**

It is however possible to so damage the free will regarding spiritual matters that it becomes impossible to believe or repent.

Examples

- (a) the Amorites and Canaanites of Joshua's day. **(Genesis 15:16)**
- (b) the Pharaoh of the Exodus. **(Exodus 7- 11)**
- (c) those who accept the mark of the beast. **(Revelation 13:8)**
- (d) the reaction of unbelievers at the second advent. **(Revelation 6:16)**

21. However there are many areas over which even those who have had limited free will have control and the person who searches will find. **(John 7:17)**

22. If God is truly sovereign how can man have genuine free choice? God has absolute sovereignty as shown by a study of His character. It is also clear that man has free will. God uses his free will as creator whilst man uses his as a part of creation.

23. One way of looking at this is fatalism which is the basis of most eastern religions which state that man's destiny is set and certain.

24. Another way is autonomy which says that all things are uncertain and therefore history goes on chaotically.

25. True biblical sovereignty is based on the creator/creation concept with the creator outside the universe and the created beings within.

Three non salvation examples:-

- (a) Paul as a prisoner on a ship bound for Rome predicts, having received advice from the angel of God, that there will be no loss of life but the ship will become a wreck. The guarantee is a sovereign guarantee and therefore absolute. Paul however tells the soldiers that they must stay on the boat to be saved. They do and they are saved. Sovereign decrees by God therefore contain free will decisions by man. **(Acts 27)**
- (b) The sovereign decree is that all things work together for good towards the goal of predestination and eventual glorification. We have a guarantee that we will be in heaven. We need to be actively involved in the chain of events. **(Romans 8:28)**

- (c) Daniel understood the time of "desolations" as seventy years as prophesied by Jeremiah and knew that it would end on time. He now seeks by supplication with sackcloth and ashes forgiveness for Israel's sin on the basis that no discipline is going to be removed without the sin having been forgiven. **(Daniel 9:2)**

God promises certain things but they are contingent on our prayer Using the principle of the sovereignty of

God we can be confident in prayer if we are controlled by the Holy Spirit. **(James 4:2)**

26. Can free will be neutral ? The answer is no, one is either positive or negative towards God. For instance if a young man is keen on a girl and is asked if he is going to marry her and he answers he does not know. As long as he debates the question he will not marry her and is therefore negative to marriage.

27. Every attack in the Christian life has one common feature, the denial of the Word of God as shown in the temptation of our Lord. Each of them therefore is an attack on the character of God.

28. The act of negative free will to the plan of God is given in **(Romans 1:18-32.)**

In this passage:-

- (a) The unbeliever hold the truth in unrighteousness. (v18)
- (b) The power of God is clearly seen by all men. (v19-20)
- (c) They became vain in their imaginations and worshipped part of the creation rather than the creator. (v21-23)
- (d) The result is sexual and other perversions. (v24-31)
- (e) They end up encouraging others to defy God. (v32)

29. Are the majority always right ? A scriptural example of this was Elijah and the prophets of Baal in **(1 Kings 18)** where on a public opinion basis Elijah would have been considered wrong.

The concept that public opinion is always correct comes from the French philosopher Rousseau who stated "the most general will is always the most just also the voice of the people is in fact the voice of God".

Another good example of this would be the public opinion that happened at the crucifixion of Christ.

30. There are therefore two classes in the Christian life, positive or negative to God's will.

31. In Old Testament times physical idols were common. The idols nowadays are commonly abstract in the form of ideas and concepts. It is up to the Christian to challenge these concepts where they occur.

CHRIST: HYPOSTATIC UNION

1. Hypostasis means standing together under one essence, two things united under one with no loss or transfer to the other and no change to either.

In the person of Jesus Christ the two natures, divine and human, were inseparably linked with no loss or transfer of properties or attributes, and no mixture or loss of separate identity the union was personal and eternal. The Lord Jesus Christ is still perfectly human and divine

2. See **Isaiah 7:14, Isaiah 9:6, John 1:1-14, Romans 1:2-5, Romans 9:5, Philippians 2:5-11, 1 Timothy 3:16, Hebrews 1:4**

3. The incarnate person of the Lord Jesus Christ included undiminished deity; He remained co equal and co eternal with the father while on earth. As a baby in the cradle he was holding the universe together.

4. The Lord Jesus Christ was also true humanity; body, soul and spirit although due to the virgin birth he had no old sin nature **1 Peter 2:22**

5. The two natures were united without transfer of attributes; the Essence of Deity and humanity were unchanged.

6. No aspect of the divine nature was lacking, although certain attributes were not exercised in line with the Father's plan **Matthew 4:1-10**
7. The union was personal and hypostatic; one essence with two natures.
8. Deity did not indwell humanity or possess it. The union was more than sympathy and harmony, it was unique combining the two natures eternally.
9. Christ had two natures in one person, therefore he could be supremely powerful yet weak at the same time.
 - a) Deity cannot be tempted, humanity can. **Matthew 4:1-10**
 - b) Deity cannot thirst, humanity can **John 19:28**
 - c) Deity is omniscient , humanity learns **Luke 2:40,52**
10. The necessity of the humanity of the Lord Jesus Christ is seen in the following:-
 - a) To be our Saviour he had to be man as God cannot die. **Hebrews 2:14,15, Philippians 2:7,8**
 - b) To be our mediator He had to be equal with both God and man **Job 9:2, 32-33, 1 Timothy 2:5-6**
 - c) To be our High Priest He must be a man. **Hebrews 7:4,5 14-28; 10:5, 10-14**
 - d) To be a king he must be a man, a Jew in the line of David. **Psalms 89:20-37, 2 Samuel 7:8-16**
11. There are three categories of sayings or actions of the Lord:
 - a) From his deity alone **John 8:58**
 - b) From his humanity alone **John 19:28**
 - c) From his hypostatic union - **John 11:25,26**
12. The uniqueness of the person of the Lord Jesus Christ is a key doctrine to understand for all believers, for it is on this point that the accurate preaching of the gospel rests. **1 Timothy 3:16**
13. The gospel message in one word is Immanuel - God with us. John's testimony on this point **John 1:14**. In Christ we see God's love and favour towards man. As God revealed himself in the Old Testament, so He perfectly reveals himself in the person of the unique person of the universe , the God man the Lord Jesus Christ.

GOD: PLAN OF GOD

1. In eternity past, God designed a plan for every believer, which takes into account every event and decision in human history.
2. The plan centres around the person of Jesus Christ. (**1 John 3:23, Ephesians 1:4-6**)
3. Entrance into the plan is based on the principle of grace. (**Ephesians 2:8, 9**) where the sovereignty of God and the free will of Man meet at the cross. God brings salvation which is complete, Man brings his faith.
4. God's plan was so designed so as to include all events and actions. (**1 Peter 1:2**)
5. Under his plan God has decreed to do some things directly and some through agencies, Israel, the Church.
6. Without interfering with human free will in any way God has designed a plan so perfect that it includes cause and effect, as well as provision, preservation and function.
7. There are many functions in the Plan of God. They all constitute one whole comprehensive plan which is perfect, eternal and unchangeable.
8. The plan of God is consistent with human freedom and does not limit or coerce human free will. Distinction should be made between what God causes and what God permits. God causes the Cross but permits sin. God is neither the author of sin nor sponsors sin.

9. His plan portrays that man has free will. God never condones sin in the human race. Man started in perfect environment and innocence. Man sinned of his own free will. Man will sin in the perfect environment of the Millennium.
10. Distinction should be made between the divine plans which are related to the plan of God and divine laws which regulate human conduct on the earth. Divine laws occur in time, divine plans occur in eternity.
11. God's plans derive from His foreknowledge. He recognised in eternity past those things which are certain. The foreknowledge of God makes no things certain, but only perceives in eternity past those things that are certain.
12. There is a difference between foreknowledge and fore ordination. Fore ordination establishes certainty but does not provide for the certainty which is established. It is the plan that provides. (**Romans 8:29, Acts 2:23, 1 Peter 1:2**)
13. Therefore the elect are foreknown and the foreknown are elect. God knew in eternity past what way each free will would go for each particular problem in life. God does not coerce human free will but he does know what way each freewill will choose at any given time. As free will decides so God provides.
14. Since God cannot contradict his own character he plans the best for the believer. God is perfect, his plan and provisions are therefore perfect.
15. The cross was planned in eternity past but the human free will of Christ decided for the cross at Gethsemane. (**Matthew 26:39-42**) God has provided salvation through the cross and it is a free will decision as to whether one accepts it or not.
16. No plan in itself opposes human freedom but once a choice is made from the free will then the plan limits your human freedom. At the same time it gives you the freedom to love and appreciate God. God lays down the means of living the Christian life.

RELIGION

(Satan's Great Deception – that we can have a system that saves us, rather than a blood bought relationship – which is the only way to God)

1. Satan's religion is a humanly acceptable one: no sin, no judgement, no Saviour and no Hell. Satan appears as an angel of light. (**2 Corinthians 11:13-19, 26**)
2. Many pastors in the churches are servants of Satan's policy, knowingly or unknowingly. (**Isaiah 30:12, Jeremiah 2:8, 2 Peter 2:1-10**)
3. Satan's strategy towards unbelievers is to keep them blinded to the gospel. (**2 Corinthians 4:3-4, Colossians 2:8, 2 Thessalonians 2:9-10**)
4. Satan's strategy towards believers is:-
 - a) To confuse by false teaching. (**Matthew 7:15, Romans 16:18**)
 - b) To appeal to pride. (**2 Corinthians 10:12**)
 - c) To promote idolatry. (**Habakkuk 2:18, 19**)
 - d) To promote legalism. (**1 Timothy 1:7-8**)
5. Satan's policy calls for counterfeit faith:-
 - a) Counterfeit gospel. (**2 Corinthians 11:3-4**)
 - b) Counterfeit pastors. (**2 Corinthians 11:13-15**)
 - c) Counterfeit communion. (**1 Corinthians 10:19-21**)
 - d) Counterfeit doctrine. (**2 Timothy 4:1**)
 - e) Counterfeit righteousness. (**Matthew 19:16-28**)
 - f) Counterfeit way of life. (**Matthew 23**)
 - g) Counterfeit power. (**2 Thessalonians 2:8-10**)
 - h) Counterfeit gods. (**2 Thessalonians 2:3-4**)

FEAR

1. Fear is seen in two ways in scripture.

[a] Firstly as a mental attitude sin that is incompatible with our status as children of the most high, the ruler of the universe.

[b] Secondly it is used to describe the correct attitude towards God the Lord for all his creatures.

There is godly fear, awe, and respect for God as God, and there is inappropriate fear, which is the cringing fear of one who believes the other is able to hurt them. This second kind is wrong for us as children of God, for none can harm us without God's permission for we belong to Him.

2. Our occupation with the persons and majesty of God is often spoken of as "fear" in the legitimate sense for believers. **2 Samuel 23:2-3, Nehemiah 5:9, Job 28:28, Psalms 19:9, 34:11-12, 111:10, Proverbs 1:7, 9:10, 10:27, 22:4, Malachi 3:16, Ephesians 5:21.**

3. Fear as a mental attitude sin is spoken of in, **1 Samuel 17:11, 24, Proverbs 29:25.**

4. In God's grace plan for us fear has no place. His plans for us are always divinely good, and any testing situation is for our good. **Romans 8:28.**

5. Fear is an expression of a failure of faith in the plan. **Exodus 14:13-14, Deuteronomy 31:6-8, Joshua 8:1, 1 Chronicles 28:20, Isaiah 41:10, 2 Timothy 1:7.**

6. Spiritual death is one way of describing Satan's kingdom and is the place of the source of fear. **Hebrews 2:14, 15**

7. In spiritual death, Adam was afraid. **Genesis 3:10**, this fear motivated Adam to produce religious activity (fig leaves) and lies. **Genesis 3:7**

8. Salvation removes the basis of fear, which is condemnation from the Justice of God (spiritual death).

9. Spiritual maturity provides freedom from fear. **2 Timothy 1:7; Hebrews 13:6, 1 John 4:18, 1 Corinthians 13:5b**

10. Carnality and any form of religious activity that leads us away from grace and daily obedience to the Word enslaves the believer to Satan through fear. **Galatians 5:1; Romans 8:15**

11. The mature believer is commanded to fear nothing he may suffer in life, for by means of God's grace provision all we ever may need is provided for us. **Revelation 2:10**

12. The baby believer is sustained by believing God's Word, obeying his commands hour by hour to daily life, and rest upon his promises. **Hebrews 4**

13. As we become mature believers we continue with this resting on the promises but in addition to this we are sustained by our understanding / application of entire categories of God's Word - we have then moved beyond the promises to confidence in the very character of God itself.

14. Illustration: A woman who asks every hour, "Do you love me?" needs assurance through many promises, and many actions backing the promises up. Once she gets to truly know her husband, and her love is fully established in him through his faithfulness to her, she has absolute assurance, and doesn't need constant reminders of his love by specific words. She is full of confidence through knowledge of her husband's character.

15. Chapter's 3-6 of Hebrews deal with the falling away from growth and confidence by these believers. The spiritual principle of Chapter 4 is the means of getting them back on target.

16. In **Hebrews 13:6**, we see the objective of the writer, freedom from fear by their daily, moment by moment living the awareness of the love of Christ for them, and the power of Christ available to them.

17. The writers of Scripture identify correctly that when the believer is fearful, he imitates the unbeliever ("cowardly" – **Revelation 21:8**), and that is not right given our great position. **Hebrews 11:27** *"By faith he left Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king, for he endured as seeing Him who is unseen."* This is our standard!
18. Fear is a mental attitude sin that shows our mind has moved away from thinking of the Lord. **1 Samuel 17:11, 24**
19. Fear is a sign of falling back into domination by the "prince of this world". **1 Samuel 18:12,29 21:12 28:20**
20. Absence of fear is a big part of maintaining a dynamic mental attitude. **Hebrews 13:6 11:27**
21. There is only one legitimate fear; it is the fear of failure to enter spiritual maturity. **Hebrews 4:1**
22. Love demands absence of fear. **1 John 4:18**. They are two opposing mental attitudes.
23. Fear is not part of the Divine Plan for the Believer. **2 Timothy 1:7 Exodus 14:13-14 Joshua 8:1 Isaiah 41:10 2 Samuel 1:7**
24. Courage and lack of fear is a sign of mature spiritual status. **Psalm 3:6, Psalm, 56:3 Hebrews 11:27**
25. Fear is the power by which the Evil of Satan rules among mankind. **Hebrews 2:14-15 Genesis 19:30** (Lot) **1 Kings 18:9-14** (Obadiah), both Lot and Obadiah show how the failing believer lives in constant fear.
26. Fear is the word used to mean "Occupation with Christ" when related to the attitude of the mature Believer toward Christ. **2 Samuel 23:3 Nehemiah 5:9, 15 Ephesians 5:21 Job 28:28 Psalm 19:9 34:10 Proverbs 1:7 9:10 Proverbs 10:27, 1 Peter 2:17**

MONEY

1. Money in coin form was unknown until the 7th century BC Prior to coins, money or valuable metal was measured in terms of ingots or rings. Croesus, King of Lydia first preserved his money in coins. When Cyrus the Great conquered Lydia, he picked up the concept of coinage and gave it to the entire world.
2. Money is not evil. It has a legitimate function. (**Genesis 23:9, Jeremiah 32:44**)
3. The believer is urged to be content with what he has received, in his position, from the Lord. **1 Timothy 6:6-10, Philippians 4:11-13, Hebrews 13:5-6**.
4. It is the lust for money and goods that corrupts a man **Jude 11**.
5. The giving of money is an expression of the believers' priesthood. (**1 Corinthians 16:2, 2 Corinthians 8 & 9**)
6. Coveting money makes one a slave to his desire. (**Matthew 6:24**). Money is a useful servant but a harsh master.
7. The danger of money to the unbeliever.
- Salvation cannot be purchased with money. (**Mark 8:36-37**)
 - Money causes the rich man to put his trust in the wrong things. (**Mark 10:23-25**)
 - Money often hinders the unbeliever from seeking salvation. (**Luke 16:19-31**)
 - Money has no credit with God. (**Proverbs 11:4, 28**)
8. The danger of money to the believer:
- Money can become part of a slavery to a vain search for happiness. (**Ecclesiastes 5:10-6:2**)
 - Love of money becomes a root of all kinds of evil. (**1 Timothy 6:6-12, 17-19**)
 - Money can contribute to pride and self-centredness. (**Acts 5:1-10**)
9. Wealth is deceitful if a person believes it will buy him happiness or provide security **Matthew 6:24-33, Luke 12:16-21. Proverbs 18:10-12, Proverbs 13:7**.

10. It is the believer's duty to wisely use his possessions, time, abilities and spiritual gifts which God has entrusted to us.

11. Three illusions about money.

(a) Money can bring happiness:- for the believer the Christian way of life is the only source of happiness.

(b) Money provides security:- Grace provides the only real security. **(Matthew 6:24-33)**

(c) Money can buy many things such as salvation, love, happiness, tranquillity.

HARMONISATION

There are no apparent problems with a direct harmonisation of these accounts

HARMONY

PREDICTION OF THE CRUCIFIXION

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, Ye know that after two days is the feast of the Passover and unleavened bread, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

CONSPIRACY BY THE SANHEDRIN

Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas. And they consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and put him to death. But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

JUDAS MAKES THEM AN OFFER

Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them. And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And when they heard it they were glad, and covenanted to give him thirty pieces of silver. And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

140 PREPARATION FOR THE PASSOVER

MATTHEW 26:17-19

17 Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover? **18** And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand; I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples. **19** And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them; and they made ready the passover.

KEY WORDS

First	Protos	First
Day	-	Not found in the original
Feast	-	Not found in the original
Unleavened Bread	Azumos	Unleavened bread
Disciples	Mathetes	Disciple
Came	Proserchomai	Come to [Aorist Active Indicative]
Saying	Lego	Say [Present Active Participle]
Wilt thou	Thelo	Desire, Will [Present Active Indicative]
Prepare	Hetoimazo	Prepare [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Eat	Phago	Eat [Aorist Active Infinitive]

Passover	Pascha	Passover
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Go	Hupago	Go [Present Active Imperative]
City	Polis	City
Such a man	Deina	So and So, Such a man
Say	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Imperative]
Master	Didaskalos	Teacher, Master
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Time	Kairos	Time period, Season
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
At Hand	Eggus	Near
Will keep	Poieo	Make, Do [Present Active Indicative]
House	Su	Thee, Thy house
Did	Poieo	Do [Aorist Active Indicative]
Appointed	Suntasso	Direct [Aorist Active Indicative]
Made ready	Hetoimazo	Prepare [Aorist Active Indicative]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 17. Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover? 18. And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand; I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples. 19. And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them; and they made ready the passover.

The first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread is technically the 15th, the day after the Passover, but the Passover was always considered the first day. The Feast of Unleavened Bread continues through the week with the Feast of First Fruits also occurring at this time. Jesus Christ stayed in Bethany for the last few days commuting to Jerusalem during the day.

It is “seven days” from the 14^{th/15th} to the 21st evening. It is as you see actually eight days, but this is only because of the Jewish day starting at 6pm of the day before, in our way of thinking... **Exodus 12:12-20, 23:14-15, Leviticus 23:6-16.**

His disciples approach Him as to where He wishes to observe the Passover with them. The Lord now gives them instructions. Matthew does not give much attention to the details of how this is going to be done or by whom, these details are given by Mark and Luke, with Mark naming the two disciples as Peter and John and the rather unusual key as to which man they should approach in their search for the room where they were to have the last meal, that will be their “Passover” that year, for when the rest of the nation are celebrating Passover, Jesus will be in the grave and the disciples will be in hiding and Judas will be hanging by a rope from the corner of the temple platform.

The word translated “such a man” is the Jewish idiom for a certain man or “Mr X”, an unknown man. The man in question was carrying a pot of water on his head, which was a very rare sight in the ancient world. In all cases where water pots were carried on people’s heads it was nearly always a woman who carried it. The man would not usually cart water, but if he did he would load it onto a donkey rather than cart it on his head himself.

The man is a believer, and Jesus tells the disciples that He is going to keep the Passover at the man’s house. The disciples went and did what the Lord requested, and prepared the room for the Passover. It is the day before the Passover evening, and so there is this coming night, when the Last Supper will be held, and then the next day, leading into the Jewish Passover that next evening, but for them all it will be their “last supper” together this night.

It should be noted that they did not query the Lord's instruction which to them must have been the equivalent to being asked to find a needle in a haystack due to the rarity of the times a man carrying water on his head would have been seen in Jerusalem, and that this is a city with up to one million people coming and going at Feast times. It is a very prayerful exercise, and will eliminate Judas discovering anything to use against them before the meal is over.

MARK 14:12-16

Mark 14:12 And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare that thou mayest eat the passover? **13** And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him. **14** And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good man of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? **15** And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us. **16** And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

KEY WORDS

First	Protos	First
Day	Hemera	Day
Unleavened bread	Azumos	Unleavened bread
Killed	Thuo	Kill [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Passover	Pascha	Passover
Disciples	Mathetes	Disciples
Said	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Wilt	Thelo	Will, Desire [Present Active Indicative]
Go	Aperchomai	Go out [Aorist Active Participle]
Prepare	Hetoimazo	Prepare [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Eatest	Phago	Eat [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Sendeth forth	Apostello	Send out [Present Active Indicative]
Two	Duo	Two
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Go ye	Hupago	Go [Present Active Imperative]
City	Polis	City
Meet	Apantao	Meet, Acquaint [Future Active Indicative]
Man	Anthropos	Man
Bearing	Bastazo	Carry, Bear [Present Active Participle]
Pitcher	Keramion	Earthenware vessel from which we get Ceramic
Water	Hudor	Water
Follow	Akoloutheo	Accompany, Follow [Aorist Active Imperative]
Wheresoever	Hopou Ean	Where ever
Go	Eiserchomai	Go in, Enter in [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Say	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Imperative]
Goodman of the house	Oikodespotes	Householder
Master	Didaskalos	Teacher
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Where	Pou	Where
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Guest chamber	Kataluma	Lodging place, Guest chamber
Eat	Phago	Eat [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Shew	Deiknuo	Show [Future Active Indicative]
Large	Megas	Large, Great
Upper room	Anogeon	Upper room
Furnished	Stronnumi	Furnished [Perfect Passive Participle]
Prepared	Hetoimos	Prepared, Made ready
Make ready	Hetoimazo	Make ready [Aorist Active Imperative]
Went forth	Exerchomai	Go out [Aorist Active Indicative]
Came	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Indicative]

Found	Heurisko	Find [Aorist Active Indicative]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Made ready	Hetoimazo	Make ready [Aorist Active Indicative]

PERFECT TENSE VERB

STRONNUMI – FURNISHED - The verb occurs 5 times in the New Testament. Both in **Mark 14:15** and **Luke 22:12** it relates to the preparation for the Passover, where the Lord sent Peter and John into Jerusalem and to make preparations for the celebration of the Passover meal. Jesus showed his complete knowledge of all things in the instruction He gave to them. Jesus told them that once inside the city a man would meet them are carrying a water jar. This was an unusual sight in an eastern city it was ordinarily of the woman who carried the pitchers of water. The Lord not only foreknew the location and the route that this man would take as well as the time of this unusual occurrence but he also knew that a certain homeowner would be willing to make his upper room available to Jesus and the disciples for the Passover meal. Perhaps this man was a believer and had made a total commitment of his person and possessions for His use.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 12. And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare that thou mayest eat the passover? 13. And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him. 14. And whosoever he shall go in, say ye to the goodman of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? 15. And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us. 16. And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

Jesus instructs his disciples to go and make ready the Passover. They are told to go into the city of Jerusalem, and there they will find a man carrying a pitcher of water. They are to follow him and he will lead them to a large upper room where the Passover can be eaten. The city is large and at Passover time only a man with a pitcher on his head will stand out above the throng. They can at least start their search from major sites of water supply in the city – likely at the outlet of Hezekiah's tunnel at the pool of Siloam, bringing water from the Gihon spring.

The reason that this would be significant was that the carrying of a pitcher of water was a woman's job, as it is today with Arab women. Traditionally the upper room, which was found by them, was the one in the home of John Mark, and this may be the same room in Acts 1 and 2 where later the church was born, although that may have been the "Stables/Porch of Solomon". It is a site for the Last Supper that is indeed close by the Temple itself, but it is of note that Mark doesn't mention it is his house, and if it was I would have expected he and Peter to note that, for Peter knew this house well.

Preparation of the Passover meal consisted of the following elements, each of which must be involved, if it was to be a full Passover meal, but remember the Lord will die as the Passover Lamb the following afternoon at 3pm, and the rest of the nation will be eating their Passover that night, after the cross. So while the following may be present, the lamb, if present, didn't need to be a sacrificial one, and it is cooked in a gravy (the sop mentioned) so it is not a Passover roasted lamb.

1. They had to go to the temple with the lamb – if it was a sacrificial lamb – maybe a sin offering made on behalf of the disciples.... We don't know this, but if it was obtained from the temple the following applies.
2. At the temple the lamb would be killed.
3. The blood of the lamb would then be poured into a bowl.
4. The bowl of blood would be poured out at the base of the altar.
5. They would sing Psalms 113-118.
6. The lamb would then be cleaned, skinned and entrails removed etc.
7. Parts of the lamb would be cut off and burned on the altar.
8. The lamb is then taken home and roasted – or in this meal, cooked any way, with a gravy.

9. Other Passover items would also be prepared such as the unleavened bread, wine, and herbs (ordinary herbs may be involved here, making the lamb sweet, not the bitter herbs of the Passover).

What Jesus was about to do was a “sweet smelling offering” and so the sweeter herbs for cooking lamb the ordinary way may have been used for this special pre-Passover meal. It will be their last Passover – for the Lord dies the next day as the Passover lamb – but that opens the door for this meal to be quite different to the way most think of it.

LUKE 22:7-13

Luke 22:7 Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed. 8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat. 9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare? 10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entereth in. 11 And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guestchamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? 12 And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished: there make ready. 13 And they went, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

KEY WORDS

Came	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Indicative]
Day	Hemera	Day
Unleavened Bread	Azumos	Unleavened bread
Passover	Pascha	Passover
Must	Dei	Must [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Killed	Thuo	Kill [Present Passive Infinitive]
Sent	Apostello	Send [Aorist Active Indicative]
Saying	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Participle]
Go	Poreuomai	Go [Aorist Passive Participle]
Prepare	Hetoimazo	Prepare [Aorist Active Imperative]
Eat	Phago	Eat [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Wilt	Thelo	Desire, Will [Present Active Indicative]
Prepare	Hetoimazo	Prepare [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Behold	Idou	Lo, Behold
Entered	Eiserchomai	Enter [Aorist Active Participle]
City	Polis	City
Man	Anthropos	Man
Meet	Sunantao	Meet [Future Active Indicative]
Bearing	Bastazo	Carry, Bear [Present Active Participle]
Pitcher	Keramion	Earthenware vessel from which we get Ceramic
Water	Hudor	Water
Follow	Akoloutheo	Accompany, Follow [Aorist Active Imperative]
House	Oikia	House
Entereth in	Eisporeuomai	Go into, Come in [Present Middle Indicative]
Say	Ereo	Say [Future Active Indicative]
Goodman	Oikodespotes	Householder
Master	Didaskalos	Teacher
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Where	Pou	Where
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Guest chamber	Kataluma	Lodging place, Guest chamber
Eat	Phago	Eat [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Shew	Deiknuo	Show [Future Active Indicative]
Large	Megas	Large, Great
Upper room	Anogeon	Upper room
Furnished	Stronnumi	Furnished [Perfect Passive Participle]
Make ready	Hetoimazo	Make ready [Aorist Active Imperative]

Went	Aperchomai	Go out [Aorist Active Participle]
Found	Heurisko	Find [Aorist Active Indicative]
Said	Ereo	Say [Pluperfect Active Indicative]
Made ready	Hetoimazo	Make ready [Aorist Active Indicative]

PERFECT TENSE VERB

STRONNUMI – FURNISHED - Occurs 5 times in the New Testament. Both Mark 14:15 and **Luke 22:12** relate to the preparation for the Passover where the Lord sent Peter and John into Jerusalem and to make preparations for the celebration of the Passover meal. Jesus showed his complete knowledge of all things in the instruction He gave to them. Jesus told them that once inside the city a man would meet them are carrying a water jar. This was an unusual sight in an eastern city it was ordinarily of the woman who carried the pitchers of water. The Lord not only foreknew the location and the route that this man would take as well as the time of this unusual occurrence but he also knew that a certain homeowner would be willing to make his upper room available to Jesus and the disciples for the Passover meal. Perhaps this man was a believer and had made a total commitment of his person and possessions for His use.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 7. Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed. 8. And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat. 9. And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare? 10. And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he entereth in. 11. And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? 12. And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished: there make ready. 13. And they went, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

In a preparation for the Passover the Lord sent Peter and John into Jerusalem and to make preparations for the celebration of the Passover (Pascal Meal).

Jesus showed his complete knowledge of all things in the instruction He gave to them. He told them that once inside the city a man would meet them there carrying a water jar. This was an unusual sight in an eastern city it was ordinarily of the woman who carried the pitchers of water.

The Lord not only foreknew the location and the route that this man would take as well as the time of this unusual occurrence, but He also knew that a certain homeowner would be willing to make his upper room available to hire for Jesus and the disciples, for the meal this night and through the Passover to the First fruits time frame – for once the Passover meal was commenced there was no tourist walking about, or shopping in the city and no travel until the Sunday morning of First Fruits.

Certainly this man was a believer and had made a total commitment of his person and possessions for His use. This has been set up well in advance, but with a precision and care that excluded Judas being able to arrange anything beforehand.

There is a difference between the guest room and a large furnished room. The host provided better facilities than the disciples expected. When Jesus was born in Bethlehem there was no room for him in the inn. Here we are told his disciples asked for a guest room, but they were given something better, a large furnished upper room.

Everything was as he had predicted so the disciples prepared the meal that would be their last Passover as a group. The food they would have to have ready, was food for this night, and the next three nights, for they would not be able to leave and walk about after Passover began the next evening at 6pm.

APPLICATION

The man with the water pot makes a good picture of the Holy Spirit who leads seeking souls to the place of communion with the Lord. The Lord set this up, and the details of our own lives are "set up" by the Lord.

The disciples were obedient, even though the sight of a man carrying a water pot on his head would be extremely rare in the ancient world. We need to trust the Lord and believe what His Word says.

The world in which we live tells us many things which are contrary to the Word of God. We have a choice of either believing what the world says or believing what the Bible says.

God says that, "my thoughts are not your thoughts, nor my ways your ways". **Isaiah 55:8**. We need to learn about God's ways from the Scripture, so that we are guided correctly in Satan's self deceived world.

We are to dedicate ourselves, our possessions, everything we have, to the Lord, because He has the right to have everything we have, including ourselves – our time and energy.

DOCTRINES

CHRISTIAN LIFE: OBEDIENCE

1. Obedience is better than offerings. (**1 Samuel 15:22; Proverbs 21:3; 28:9**). If we are not in God's will, any "worship" we offer is unacceptable.
2. Obedience is something you have to learn. The basic training in obedience has to start in childhood. As it says in (**Exodus 20:12 and Deuteronomy 5:16**) "Honour your father and your mother ". (**Proverbs 4:3, 4; 22:6; 29:15-17; Hebrews 5:8**).
3. Teaching your child obedience is an act of love. (**Proverbs 3:12; 19:18; 23:13-14**).
4. We have to obey those who are in authority over us. (**Exodus 20:12; 22:28; Leviticus 19:3; Deuteronomy 5:16; Romans 13:1-5; Ephesians 6:1-5; Colossians 3:18-22; Titus 3:1**).
5. Those in authority have been put in that position by God. (**Romans 13:1**).
6. Obedience to those in authority is obedience to God. (**Proverbs 24:21; Ephesians 6:7; Colossians 3:23-24; Romans 13:5**).
7. Disobedience to those in authority is disobedience to God. (**Romans 1:30; 13:2**).
8. But when we are ordered to do something that is against God's Will we have to disobey. (**Acts 4:19; 5:40-42**)
9. The fifth commandment (**Exodus 20:12; Deuteronomy 5:16**) is the only commandment with a promise. (**Proverbs 10:17; Ephesians 6:1-3**). Social life in a society is only possible when the people in it have learned to obey.
10. If this commandment is ignored, if the authority of the family is denied or not exercised, society will quickly slide into anarchy. (**Isaiah 3:12; Proverbs 29:21; 30:21-23; Romans 1:30**).
11. Jesus Christ was perfect in His obedience. (**Luke 2:51; Philippians 2:8**). Examples of the Lord's perfect obedience to the Father's will.
 - a) The Lord's temptation in the wilderness (**Matthew 4:1-11**), where the Lord resisted the temptation in His humanity to use His divine power outside the Father's will (**Philippians 2:5-8, Hebrews 10:7**)
 - b) In the Garden of Gethsemane the Lord resisted all temptation to the contrary but set His face firmly to go through with the horror of the cross (**Matthew 26:38-46, Mark 14:34-42, Luke 22:41-44**)
 - c) During the provocations of the trials the Lord stood firm and resolute. Although He had the power to resist arrest, as shown briefly in (**John 18:6**), He voluntarily went with the troops, even chiding Peter for his sword play (**Luke 22:49-51**). Although abused (**Matthew 26:67-68**), struck (**John 18:22**), scourged (**Matthew 27:26**), mocked and beaten (**Matthew 27:27-31**), and finally crucified the Lord calmly accepted this all as

part of the Father's Plan, resisting any temptation to rebel at the injustice, cruelty and callousness of those who perpetrated this evil. Rather He prayed for them, acknowledging to Pilate that all this was part of His role as Saviour (**Luke 23:34, John 18:37**)

d) When miracles were demanded by Herod Antipas (**Luke 23:8-11**) the Lord resisted any temptation to instantly judge that evil man and his court but saying nothing set His face to the cross on which He would bear even the sins of Herod Antipas (**1 John 2:2**)

e) When He stumbled on the road to the cross He did not call on divine strength but Simon of Cyrene had to be pressed into service to carry the cross. (**Matthew 27:32, Luke 23:26**)

f) When reviled by the crowds as He hung on the cross, taunted to do things which He could have done, He resisted all temptation to step down from the cross but stayed there to bear the sins of all. (**Matthew 27:39-44, Mark 15:29-32, Luke 23 :35-39**)

HOLY SPIRIT – EFFECTIVE CALLING

1. Drawing (Gk. elkuo) means to draw, lead or impel. In this case the drawing or calling is in love. All the elect will freely respond to the work of the Holy Spirit. The drawing provides the motive to respond.
2. All people are called to repent, but only the elect are drawn. (**John 3:16, 36, 12:32, 16:8-11, 1 John 2:2**)
3. Believers, Called Ones, Elect, are all names for the same person. God calls, the Holy Spirit works, we simply respond to the call of Love. (**Jeremiah 31:3, John 3:16**)
4. The calling provides the motivation for the expression of love in the unbeliever who is positive towards salvation. (**Philippians 2:13**)
5. God can thereby give His gift of salvation to the elect. (**John 1:13, Romans 9:16 Ephesians 2:8-9, Titus 3:5-6**)
6. God therefore gets the glory for His work, we get the benefits (**Jude 24-25**)
 - (a) God planned it in eternity past.
 - (b) God provides it at the cross.
 - (c) God prepares for it in the life by conviction.
 - (d) God provides the motivation to accept the offer.
 - (e) God gives the gift of salvation to the elect.
 - (f) God gives the Holy Spirit to the new believer.
 - (g) God has prepared a new body for the believer.

HARMONISATION

There are no apparent problems with a direct harmonisation of these accounts

HARMONY

PREPARATIONS FOR THE PASSOVER

And then came the first day of unleavened bread, when they must kill the Passover, his disciples came to Him and said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare for Thee that thou mayest eat the Passover?

And he sendeth forth Peter and John, two of his disciples and saith unto them, Go and prepare us the Passover, that we may eat. And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare? And he said unto them, Go ye into the city and when ye are entered into the city, behold there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into the house where he entereth in.

And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house, The Master saith unto thee My time is at hand; I will keep the Passover at thy house with my disciples. Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the Passover with my disciples? And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us.

And his disciples went forth did as Jesus had appointed them; and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the Passover.

141 THE DISCIPLES LAST PASSOVER

MATTHEW 26:20

20. Now when the even was come, he sat down with the twelve.

KEY WORDS

Now	De	And, But, Now
When the Even	Opsios	Evening
Come	Ginomai	Come into being [Aorist Middle Participle]
Sat down	Anakeimai	Recline at dinner [Imperfect Middle Indicative]
Twelve	Dodeka	Twelve

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

MARK 14:17

17. And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

KEY WORDS

Evening	Opsios	Evening
Cometh	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
Twelve	Dodeka	Twelve

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

LUKE 22:14-18, 24-30

Luke 22:14 And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. **15** And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer: **16** For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. **17** And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves: **18** For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

Luke 22:24 And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest. **25** And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. **26** But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief,

as he that doth serve. 27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth. 28 Ye are they which **have continued** with me in my temptations. 29 And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; 30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

KEY WORDS

Hour	Hora	Hour
Come	Ginomai	Come into being [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Sat down	Anapipto	Recline [Aorist Active Indicative]
Twelve	Dodeka	Twelve
Apostles	Apostolos	Apostles
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Desire	Epithumia	Desire
Desired	Epithumeo	To desire [Aorist Active Indicative]
Eat	Phago	Eat [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Passover	Pascha	Passover
Suffer	Pascho	Suffer [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Will	Hoti	Will
Eat	Phago	Eat [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Fulfilled	Pleroo	Fulfilled [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]
Kingdom	Basileia	Kingdom
God	Theos	God
Took	Dechomai	Take, Receive [Aorist Middle Participle]
Cup	Poterion	Cup
Gave thanks	Eucharisteo	Give thanks [Aorist Active Participle]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Take	Lambano	Take [Aorist Active Imperative]
Divide	Diamerizo	Divide, Distribute [Aorist Active Imperative]
Yourselves	Heautou	Yourselves
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Drink	Pino	Drink [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Fruit	Karpos	Fruit
Vine	Ampelos	Vine
Shall come	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Was	Ginomai	Came into being [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Strife	Phioneikia	Strife, Dispute
Should be accounted	Doceo	Be accounted [Present Active Indicative]
Greatest	Meizon	Greatest
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Kings	Basileus	King
Gentiles	Ethnos	Gentile
Exercise lordship	Kurieuo	Have Rulership [Present Active Indicative]
Exercise authority	Exousiazoo	Bring under the power of, Control [Present Active Participle]
Called	Kaleo	Call [Present Passive Indicative]
Benefactors	Euergetes	Benefactor, Philanthropist
Shall not	Ou	Not
Be so	Houto	Thus
Be	Ginomai	Become [Present Middle Imperative]
Younger	Neos	Young
Is chief	Hegeomai	Is chief [Present Middle Participle]
Doth serve	Diakoneo	Serve [Present Active Participle]
Is greater	Meizon	Greater
Sitteth at meat	Anakeimai	Recline at a meal [Present Middle Participle]
Serveth	Diakoneo	Serve [Present Active Participle]
Is not	Ouchi	Not indeed
Sitteth at Meat	Anakeimai	Recline at a meal [Present Middle Participle]
Am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]

Among	En Mesos	In the middle or midst
Serveth	Diakoneo	Serve [Present Active Participle]
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Have continued	Diameno	Continue, Remain [Perfect Active Participle]
Temptations	Peirasmos	Adversity
Appoint	Diatithemai	Appoint [Present Middle Indicative]
Father	Pater	Father
Appointed	Diatithemai	Appoint [Aorist Middle Indicative]
May eat	Esthio	Eat [Present Active Subjunctive]
Drink	Pino	Drink [Present Active Subjunctive]
Table	Trapeza	Table
Sit	Kathizo	Sit [Future Middle Indicative]
Thrones	Thronos	Throne
Judging	Krino	Judging [Present Active Participle]
Tribes	Phule	Tribe

PERFECT TENSE VERB

DIAMENO – CONTINUE occurs three times in the New Testament but only once in the Perfect Tense. It is one of 10 Greek verbs translated “to continue” but DIAMENO means to continue without interruption. In **Luke 22:28** this is to the very close knit group of disciples indicating their permanent future rewards for faithfulness.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

- Verse 14. And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him.**
15. And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer:
16. For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.
17. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves:
18. For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

For centuries of the Jews had celebrated the Passover Feast, commemorating their deliverance from Egypt and from death through the blood of the perfect lamb, which was slain by the believers. Here we see as the true Passover Lamb, the Lord Jesus Christ sitting down with his disciples to in effect, the day before he will die as the Passover Lamb, celebrate the Feast for the last time, but not in the traditional formal manner.

This particular Passover Season held tremendous meaning for Him, and he had deeply desired to have this last supper with those he loved before He was to suffer. He will not feast this way again until He returns to earth and sets up His glorious kingdom in the Millennium.

In the phrase, “with desire I have desired to eat this Passover”, indicates the great desire that the Lord has for communion with these believers at His table this night before the Cross. The Lord uses the Passover ritual for this meal, and it becomes their “last Passover”, and the Lord does this for many reasons that will emerge as we look at this unique event.

When he took the cup of wine, which as part of the normal Passover ritual, was the Fourth Cup – the cup of Blessing - he gave thanks for it and passed it to His disciples, reminding them once again that he would not drink of the fruit of the vine again until His Millennial Reign.

This was a unique, poignant event, but they will not grasp the “gravitas” of the event initially, and only later do they see what they missed here...

- Verse 24. And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest. 25. And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. 26. But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. 27. For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? Is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am**

among you as he that serveth. 28. Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations. 29. And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; 30. That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

It is a very sad reflection on human nature that while this very important and unique meal was being enjoyed by the Lord and the disciples, the disciples started arguing among themselves **again** as to who would be the greatest. It does however allow the Lord to teach about the concept of greatness in the church, but they have missed a moment that will not be repeated. How often do we fill a silence, that needed to be savoured? How often have we missed a unique event with someone, who wasn't going to be there again?

Jesus pointed out to the disciples that rulers of Gentile nations are considered to be very important or the greatest in the kingdom and they are served by the "lesser beings". They exercise rulership and exercise authority over their kingdom. Their subjects call them benefactors and noble people, whereas in fact they are often despots who tyrannize and oppress their subjects.

Jesus challenges the disciples, and ourselves, about the true nature of leadership and what it takes to lead God's people, and that is a spirit of humble dependence on the Lord, as our sole guide, and our focus upon the Lord's people as our responsibility for care; humble service is always the starting point for the pastor of God's flock.

Jesus says that his kingdom is different to the Roman Empire, and every other power focused structure, and the positions of importance in his kingdom of filled by those who serve others, rather than those who recline at banquets and are served by others. In the ancient world the elderly and leadership were held in high esteem, and were considered to be the elders or rulers in their community. Jesus however says that the most important or greatest people in his kingdom are to be like the younger or less important in a worldly kingdom, and have a servant mentality. We are here to "pour ourselves out" for others, right until the end of our lives. **2 Timothy 4:6.**

In verse 26 the words shall and be do not occur in the original so the phrase, "But ye shall not be so", would read literally, "But ye not so". The Lord Jesus Christ advises his disciples that even though they may appear to be insignificant now, when he returns and sets up His kingdom during the Millennium, He will appoint them as judges over the twelve tribes of Israel, and He will have fellowship with them at that time.

His is there because they have continued with Him during all the times of pressure and testing that has occurred during His ministry. We have seen earlier on that many people followed Jesus but when things became difficult they forsook Him and left.

The twelve disciples however stayed with the Lord Jesus Christ and because of their faithfulness they will be rewarded in the future, even though they get things wrong, again and again, they hung in there, and that is our example.

APPLICATION

The Lord desires communion and fellowship with believers. We are now members of His body. If there is lack of fellowship it is caused by us, as the Lord never turns His back on us. **Revelation 3:19-22.**

The concept of the younger, the server, being of greater stature than the person being served, can be seen in the concept that it is "better to give than to receive".

We need to remember that all spiritual gifts are servanthood gifts. They are not to be used to oppress people, nor do they exist to have us feel important, but they are given to bless the church. **1 Corinthians 12:7.**

It is also clear that work undertaken in this life for the Lord will enjoy not only His approval but also blessings and rewards in the future.

It is important that we get our priorities right and place our Lord in His rightful position in our life. Bickering and jostling for position in a church is an abomination for the Lord.

There are two attitudes to leadership in history; the controllers and dominators who desire power and all it can bring to those who exercise it with single mindedness, and then the opposite, the servant hearted

leaders who care nothing for power, but seek to be a blessing to those they lead. It is the latter that is Jesus leadership model.

DOCTRINES

CHURCH: MINISTERS

1. Used for political leadership in a nation (**Romans 13:4**).
2. Used as the pastor of the local church (**Ephesians 3:7; Colossians 1:23, 25; Colossians 4:7; Ephesians 6:21; 1Timothy 1:12**).
3. Used for all believers (**2 Corinthians 3:6; 4:1; 6:4**).
4. Origin - in the classical Greek the word was used for those who rowed in the lower decks, the place of greatest toil on a ship - a servant or slave.
5. Principle - The minister should see himself as the servant as well as leader of his flock.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: DISAGREEMENTS

1. In Paul's last words to the church, he records the danger of distracting arguments that lead believers away from Christ centeredness. The challenge for believers is to remain focused on the study of God's Word in the filling and teaching of the Holy Spirit. We are not to be prophecy "nuts" or have any other pet doctrines, but rather we are to grow in Christ likeness. **2 Timothy 2:14-19, 23-25, 3:10-17**. Refer, HOLY SPIRIT (Ministries), MATURITY, FRUIT, SPIRITUALITY.
2. Good men and women differ in their opinions on some doctrines, due to their different interpretation of a passage of the Word of God. The possibility is that either or both are wrong. There are some things that we will only be sure of when we get to heaven, and we must operate on earth upon "best practice" in exegesis and life. Major differences on minor doctrines in today's churches centre around prophetic interpretation; with pre, mid and post tribulational views regarding the Rapture. There is also great difference regarding the manner of baptism, and the gifts of the Holy Spirit.
3. Spirituality is determined not by correctness of doctrine, but by holiness and Christ likeness of the person's life. Refer HOLINESS. A great saint of the past identified several tests for truth regarding interpretations of scripture. They are useful to consider before arguing – which is, by the way, always a sign you have it wrong!
 - A. Does my interpretation make me more practical and loving towards others?
 - B. Does my interpretation make me more evangelistic for the lost?
 - C. Does my interpretation make me more keen to serve in the local church?
 - D. Does my interpretation make me focus on others rather than myself?
4. If you discover that these questions are not true for your viewpoint, then on the basis of scripture you are 100% likely to be wrong in your interpretation and application of the text you have just "twisted". **2 Peter 3:14-18**. Refer Love, Sanctification, Servanthood. **Matthew 12:15-21, 20:27, Mark 9:35, 10:44, John 15:4-10, 16-17**.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT

1. The filling of the Holy Spirit produces fruit in the life (love, joy, peace, long suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance). (**Galatians 5:22-23**) Note that "fruit" is singular - all the characters are produced at the same time in the filling of the Holy Spirit.
2. The Fruit of the Spirit is also listed as follows:-
Romans 14:17 - Righteousness, Peace, Joy
Colossians 3:12-15 - Compassion, Kindness, Humility, Gentleness, Patience, Forgiveness, Love, Peace, Thankfulness
1Thessalonians 1:3 - Faith, Love, Endurance, Hope

2. In principle, it is the imitation of God (**Ephesians 5:1**). The reason we are left on the earth after salvation is to produce fruit. (**John 15:16, Philipians 4:17**)
3. We produce fruit by hearing the word (**Mark 4:20-28**) and applying it to our lives. (**Hebrews 4:2**)
4. Failure to grow and produce fruit means divine discipline even to the point of the believer's early departure from this life. (**Luke 13:6-9 John 15:2**)
5. Rewards in eternity are distributed on the basis of faithful production. (**1 Corinthians 3:10-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10**)
6. Fruit is not to be confused with spiritual gifts. These are listed in (**Romans 12:6-8; 15:18-19; 1Corinthians 12:8,10; 1Corinthians 12:28-30; Ephesians 4:1**) and other places.
7. One can know Christians by their fruit (**Matthew 7:16-20; Luke 6:43-45; 1John 3:10 & 11; John 15:8**) especially by their love (**John 13:35**) but not by their gifts, as Satan can imitate them (**2Thessalonians 2:9**).
8. Three natural fruits represent some of the facets of the fruit of the Spirit: Apples - love, Grapes - Joy, Pomegranates - Peace.
9. In Galatians **5: 22-23** the fruit of the Spirit is divided into three sections
 - [a] Love, Joy and Peace towards God;
 - [b] Patience, Goodness and Kindness towards others;
 - [c] Faithfulness, Gentleness and Self-control towards oneself.

CHRISTIAN LIFE – REWARDS AND CROWNS

1. Rewards and Salvation are carefully separated in the scriptures. Salvation is a free gift from God, rewards are for meritorious service in the power of the Spirit.
2. Salvation - a free gift to the lost. (**Ephesians 2:8-9, Romans 6:23, John 4:10**) - an everlasting possession. (**John 3:36, John 5:24, John 6:47**)
3. Rewards - to the saved who faithfully work for the Lord. (**1 Corinthians 9:24, 25, Revelation 22:12**) - distributed at the Judgement Seat of Christ. (**1 Corinthians 3:11-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10, Romans 14:10**)
4. Rewards as Crowns:-
 - a) The incorruptible crown - for faithfulness in exercising self control. (**1 Corinthians 9:24-27**)
 - b) The crown of glory - for faithfulness in suffering. (**1 Peter 5:4**)
 - c) The crown of life - for faithfulness under trial. (**James 1:12, Revelation 2:10**)
 - d) The crown of righteousness - for faithful testimony. (**2 Timothy 4:8**)
 - e) The crown of rejoicing - for faithful service. (**1 Thessalonians 2:19, 20, Philipians 4:1**)

CHRISTIAN LIFE: SUBMISSION

1. This means to humble oneself in willing service to another, with the connotation that it is for your good. **Genesis 16:9, 1 Peter 5:6, Hebrews 13:17.**
2. We must fully surrender ourselves to God. **James 4:7, Romans 12:1-2** As the Lord made himself obedient unto death so must we. **Philippians 2:18.**
3. We are, in Christ to submit ourselves each to the other within the church. This involves putting the spiritual needs of others ahead of any personal interests. **Ephesians 5:21.**
4. Within the church believers are to submit to the teaching authority of the pastor as he preaches from the Word. **Hebrews 13:17, 1 Corinthians 16:6, 1 Peter 5:5.**

5. A wife is to submit herself to her own husband within their marriage. This involves respect for him as her spiritual leader and protector. **Ephesians 5:22, Colossians 3:18, Titus 2:4 -5.**
6. Children also are to submit in love to their parents' authority under God. **Colossians 3:20.**
7. All believers are to be in submission to the laws of their land, unless those laws violate the clear command of God. **Romans 13:1, 2, Matthew 22:21, 1 Peter 2:13-17**, exception example, **Acts 4:15-20, 5:40-42.**
8. Workers are to be under authority of their employers and their managers. **Colossians 3:22-25, Ephesians 6:5-8, Titus 2:9, 10, 1 Peter 2:18-24.**
9. Those in authority have a special responsibility to treat those under them with care and respect. **Colossians 4:1**

KINGDOM

1. The Kingdom of Heaven is distinguished from the Kingdom of God.
 - a) Kingdom of Heaven
 - i) The Kingdom of Heaven will be the visible future Kingdom of the Lord on the earth. **(Luke 1:31-33)**
 - ii) Entrance into the Kingdom of Heaven, includes those physically alive going into the Millennium. **(Matthew 13:24-30, 36-43, 47-50)**
 - b) Kingdom of God
 - i) The Kingdom of God is spiritual **(John 3:3, Romans 14:17, Luke 17:20)**
 - ii) Entrance into the Kingdom of God is through regeneration. **(John 3:3-7)**
 - iii) The Kingdom of God covers the divine authority over all creation for all time. **(Luke 13:28, 29, Hebrews 12:22, 23)**
2. The King was born as prophesied of a virgin **(Isaiah 7:14 cf. Matthew 1:18-25)** and in Bethlehem. **(Micah 5:2 cf. Matthew 2:1)**
3. The Kingdom was announced as at hand **(Matthew 4:17)** but was rejected by the Jews both from a moral **(Matthew 11:20)** and official viewpoint **(Matthew 21:42-43)**. As a result the King was crowned with thorns.
4. Afterwards He announced His purpose to build His church. **(Matthew 16:18)**
5. The mysteries of the Church and the Kingdom of Heaven were seen as concurrent - they both refer to the spiritual kingdom. **(Ephesians 3:9-11)**
6. When He returns at the Second Advent, the Lord Jesus Christ will establish the Kingdom for 1000 years before eternity resumes. **(Matthew 24:27-30, Luke 1:31-33, Acts 15:14-17, Revelation 20:1-10)**
7. At the end of the Millennium, Jesus Christ will deliver up the Kingdom to the Father **(1 Corinthians 15:24-28)**
8. The eternal throne is of God and the Lamb. **(Revelation 22:1)**

KINGDOM: MILLENNIAL KINGDOM

1. "Thy will be done on earth, " will be fulfilled in the Millennium. **(Matthew 6:10)**
2. The Kingdom is the Millennium, the first 1,000 years of Jesus' eternal reign. It will be after the second advent, on the old earth. **(Revelation 20:4-6)**
 - a) Promised **(2 Samuel 7:8-17, Psalm 89:20-33)**
 - b) Prophesied **(Isaiah 2:1-5, 2:11, 12, 35, 55, 56, 62:11)**
 - c) Presented (Matthew, Mark, Luke) Israel, not the church)
 - d) Postponed Epistles of New Testament (for church age)
 - e) Proclaimed **(Revelation 10)** (Angelic herald) **(Revelation 11:1-1 4)** (Human heralds)
 - f) Plagiarized **(Revelation 13)**

g) Perfected (**Revelation 11:15-19**)

3. Issues relating to the Kingdom

- a) The Character of God - will He keep His word to Israel? Yes. Jesus Christ will reign.
- b) Unconditional Covenant - will He keep Covenant? Yes. Abrahamic, Palestinian, Davidic, New - all fulfilled in the Millennium.
- c) Dispersion of Israel - will He recover them again? Yes. At the second advent.
- d) Advent - will He return to earth at the worst period in history? Yes. At the end of the Tribulation.
- e) Millennial - The Kingdom of Jesus Christ is eternal, why the emphasis on the first 1,000 years? Jesus will do what Satan has been trying to do for 6,000 years; He will create perfect environment in an instant, as a demonstration to prove that perfect environment is not the answer; regeneration is.

4. Principles from **Micah 4:1-8**

- a) The Kingdom will be supreme. (**Micah 4:1**)
- b) The Kingdom will be universal. (**Micah 4:2**)
- c) The Kingdom will be peaceful. (**Micah 4:3**)
- d) The Kingdom will secure universal prosperity. (**Micah 4:4-5**)
- e) The nation of Israel ruled by the Lord for the Kingdom. (**Micah 4:6-8**)

HARMONISATION

There are no apparent problems with a direct harmonisation of these accounts

HARMONY

THE LAST PASSOVER MEAL

And when the evening was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer: For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves: For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest. And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth.

Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations. And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

142 THE FEET WASHING IN THE UPPER ROOM**JOHN 13:1-20**

John 13:1 Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus **knew** that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. 2 And supper being ended, the devil **having now put** into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him; 3 Jesus **knowing** that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God; 4 He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself. 5 After that he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith **he was girded**. 6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? 7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou **knowest** not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. 8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. 9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. 10 Jesus saith to him, He that **is washed** needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. 11 For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean. 12 So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what **I have done** to you? 13 Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. 14 If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. 15 For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. 16 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. 17 If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them. 18 I speak not of you all: **I know** whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me. 19 Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am he. 20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

KEY WORDS

Before	Pro	Before
Feast	Heorte	Feast
Passover	Pascha	Passover
Knew	Oida	Perceive, Know [Perfect Active Participle]
Hour	Hora	Hour
Come	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Indicative]
Should Depart	Metabaino	Depart, Go [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Out of	Ek	Out of
World	Kosmos	World
Father	Pater	Father
Loved	Agapao	Love [Aorist Active Participle]
Were in	En	In
Loved	Agapao	Love [Aorist Active Indicative]
End	Telos	End
Supper	Deipnon	Dinner
Being ended	Ginomai	To become [Present Middle Participle]
Devil	Diabolos	Devil
Having now	Ede	Even now
Put	Ballo	Throw, Cast [Perfect Active Participle]
Heart	Kardia	Heart
Son	-	Not found in the original
Betray	Paradidomi	Betray [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Knowing	Eido	Perceive, Know [Perfect Active Participle]
Given	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Indicative]
All things	Pas	All
Hands	Cheir	Hands
Was come	Eρχομαι	Come [Aorist Active Indicative]
Went	Hupago	Go [Present Active Indicative]
Riseth	Eγειρο	Rise up [Present Passive Indicative]
Laid aside	Tithemi	Lay aside [Present Active Indicative]
Garments	Himation	Robe, Cloak

Took	Lambano	Take [Aorist Active Participle]
Towel	Lention	Towel
Girded	Diazonnumi	Gird tightly [Aorist Active Indicative]
Poureth	Ballo	Pour, Throw, Cast [Present Active Indicative]
Water	Hudor	Water
Bason	Nipter	Basin
Began	Archomai	Begin [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Wash	Nipto	Wash [Present Active Infinitive]
Disciples	Mathetes	Disciple
Feet	Pous	Feet
Wipe	Ekmasso	Wipe dry [Present Active Infinitive]
Was	Eimi	Kept on being [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Girded	Diazonnumi	Gird tightly [Perfect Middle Participle]
Cometh	Erchomai	Come [Present Middle Indicative]
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Dost thou	Ou	Thou
Wash	Nipto	Wash [Present Active Indicative]
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Do	Poieo	Do [Present Active Indicative]
Knowest	Eido	Perceive [Perfect Active Indicative]
Shalt know	Ginosko	Know [Future Middle Indicative]
Hereafter	Meta Tauta	These things hereafter
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Shalt wash	Nipto	Wash [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Wash	Nipto	Wash [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Hast	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Indicative]
No part	Meros	Part, Portion
With	Meta	With
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Lord	Kurios	Lord, Master
Only	Monon	Alone
Hands	Cheir	Hand
Head	Kephale	Head
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Is washed	Louo	Wash [Perfect Passive Participle]
Needeth	Echo Chreia	Need [Present Active Indicative]
Save	E	Except
Wash	Nipto	Wash [Aorist Middle Infinitive]
Is clean	Eimi	Keeps on being [Present Active Indicative]
Clean	Katharos	Clean
Every whit	Holos	Altogether
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
All	Pas	All
Knew	Oida	Know, Perceive [Pluperfect Active Indicative]
Should betray	Paradidomi	Betray [Present Active Participle]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Washed	Nipto	Wash [Aorist Active Indicative]
Taken	Lambano	Take [Aorist Active Indicative]
Set down	Anapipto	Recline [Aorist Active Indicative]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Know	Ginosko	Know [Present Active Indicative]
Have done	Poieo	Do [Perfect Active Indicative]
Call	Phoneo	Call [Present Active Indicative]
Master	Didaskalos	Teacher
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Well	Kalos	Well
I am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Have washed	Nipto	Wash [Aorist Active Indicative]
Also	Kai	Also

Ought to	Opheilo	Be bound [Present Active Indicative]
Wash	Nipto	Wash [Present Active Infinitive]
Another's	Allelon	Another
Have given	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Indicative]
Example	Hupodeigma	Example
Should do	Poieo	Do [Aorist Active Indicative]
Have done	Poieo	Do [Present Active Subjunctive]
Verily	Amen	Truly
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Servant	Doulos	Slave
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Greater	Meizon	Greater
Lord	Kurios	Lord
Is sent	Apostolos	Sent
Sent	Pempo	Send [Aorist Active Participle]
Know	Eido	Know, Perceive [Perfect Active Indicative]
Happy	Makarios	Happy
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Do	Poieo	Do [Present Active Subjunctive]
Speak	Lego	Speak, Say [Present Active Indicative]
Know	Eido	Know [Perfect Active Indicative]
Chosen	Ekleptomai	Called out, Chosen [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Scripture	Graphe	Scripture, Writings
May be fulfilled	Pleroo	Fulfil [Aorist Passive Subjunctive]
Eateth	Trogo	Chew, Crunch, Eat [Present Active Participle]
Bread	Artos	Bread
Hath lifted	Epairio	Lift [Aorist Active Indicative]
Heel	Ptema	Heel
Against	Epi	Against
Tell	Lego	Speak, Tell [Present Active Indicative]
Before	Pro	Before
Come	Ginomai	Come to pass [Aorist Middle Infinitive]
Is come to pass	Ginomai	Come to pass [Aorist Middle Subjunctive]
May believe	Pisteuo	Believe [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
I am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Receiveth	Lambano	Receive [Present Active Participle]
Send	Pempo	Send [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Receiveth	Lambano	Receive [Present Active Indicative]
Receiveth	Lambano	Receive [Present Active Participle]
Receiveth	Lambano	Receive [Present Active Indicative]
Sent	Pempo	Send [Aorist Active Participle]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS

BALLO – THROW, CAST, LAY – The verb occurs 125 times in the New Testament with 8 times in the Perfect Tense all within the Gospels and mostly in the Passive Participle format. These “Perfect Tenses” in Ballo can be put into two areas, firstly the very sick and secondly the likelihood of judgment resulting in death.

In the first category there are four cases, Matthew 8:6, Matthew 8:16, Matthew 9:2 and Mark 7:30, we have terminally ill people in the form of the Centurion's servant, Peter's mother in law, the man with the palsy, and the demon possessed girl. In all cases without the intervention of the Lord Jesus Christ by miraculously healing, their future certainty would have been very swift death.

In the second category there are four cases two of which in Mark 9:42, Luke 17:2 [Rhipto], with a person who “*offend one of these little ones that believe in me*”, and Barabbas who had been convicted of, “*that for sedition and murder*”, in Luke 23:25, where Permanent Divine judgment was in order. In the other two in **John 3:24**, John the Baptist will be cast into prison, where he will be killed, while the satanic infiltration of Judas to betray Jesus Christ in **John 13:2**, will lead to Judas' death as an unbeliever.

DIAZONNUMI – TIGHTLY GIRD – This verb occurs 3 times in the New Testament, and is one of four Greek verbs so translated. It appears once in the Perfect Tense here in **John 13:5**. The root verb is “Zonnumi” but with the “Dia” addition means that the clothing is, “Tightly or firmly girded”. It is similarly used for Peter when he clothes himself before jumping into the sea to greet the risen Lord. John 21:7.

In **John 13:5** the Lord prepares everything for the foot washing. He removes his clothing and wears only a towel. This was the dress of the foot washing slave. The slave is going to get dirty as he washes the feet. The feet are going to be dried on the towel which is around Him. He provides everything to wash their feet - 1 John 1:9.

LOUO – WASH - Occurs 6 times in the New Testament of which twice are in the Perfect Tense. In **John 13:9** once you have believed you are saved forever. The only question is “are you in fellowship or not”? In Hebrews **10:19-23** we see that we have been washed and cleansed of sin through the work of the Lord Jesus Christ on the Cross

OIDA, EIDO – TO KNOW – Occurs 251 times in the Perfect Tense in the New Testament and is by far the largest with Grapho next at 96 occurrences. Because of the mixture of “knows” and “don’t knows” and different characters ranging from the Trinity, through the Disciples of Christ, Religious Leaders, and even to demons the review of this verb is given in each verse it occurs.

POIEO – DONE, MADE - Occurs 475 times in the New Testament with 16 times in the Perfect Tense and with one exception all are in the Active Voice. John 12:18 tells of those who had heard of Lazarus being resuscitated and came to meet Jesus because they heard He had done this sign. However in John 12:37 although He had done so many signs they did not believe in Him fulfilling the prophecy of Isaiah 53:1. At the foot washing of the disciples in **John 13:12** Jesus said to them “Do you know what I have done to you? Later we find Peter in John 18:18 warming himself in the courtyard by a fire that had been made.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED AT THE FIRST COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

ITEM	OLD TESTAMENT	DESCRIPTION	FULFILMENT
142	Psalm 41:9	Betrayed by a familiar friend	John 13:18
	Psalm 55:12-14	Betrayed by a friend not an enemy	John 13:18
	Isaiah 46:9-10	Declares things not yet done	John 13:19
	Jeremiah 23:5-6	The Messiah would be both God and man	John 13:13

REFLECTION

This chapter represents almost a half way point in the Gospel of John, with the first twelve chapters dealing with the ministry to the world, whilst chapters 13 to 17 is the Lord's last week of ministry, focused towards those who are His. Here we are in this chapter leading into the last supper.

We will see some important contrasts between the Synoptic Gospels, and John's Gospel as far as the last supper is concerned. Remember also in light of what we have already seen with Judas, that he is here in this supper, right up until the moment Jesus tells him to go. He receives several offers of grace here, and right up to the moment he leaves he could have repented and been saved, but like the majority in Jerusalem this night, “he would not...”

The chapter divides into six sections of which the first three are dealt with in this passage

- [a] The last supper introduced- verses 1-2
- [b] The foot washing - verses 3-11
- [c] The explanation of the foot washing - verses 12-20
- [d] Jesus foretells his betrayal - verses 21-30
- [e] The new commandment - verses 31-35
- [f] Jesus foretells Peter's denial - verses 36-38

Remember John wrote his Gospel to clarify some points within the Synoptic Gospel accounts, and to supplement their accounts. One thing he makes quite clear is that the last supper was not the traditional Jewish Passover Meal, although for the disciples, it will be their Passover supper that year.

This is the night before the Jewish Passover, but Jesus will use the format of the Passover in this meal to teach things about what he is to do within a few hours, becoming their Passover, for them and all mankind. **1 John 2:1-2.**

The Passover meal is the following night for the rest of the nation – except Joseph and Nicodemus also – more below. But they will not be celebrating with the unbelieving nation, as the Lord has been crucified by that time and is laid in the tomb of Joseph of Arimathea. It would be totally wrong for them to celebrate the Passover with the rest of Israel, as the Lamb of God has been slain that afternoon. He has gone to the Cross to fulfil the Passover completely, and to the very moment of the day, 3pm of the “second evening of the day before the Passover”, and the first moment when the lambs could be slain for the Passover. The Passover looked forward to the Cross, while the Communion table looks back to it. The Last Supper sets the pattern for the Passover Meal's replacement for the Church until the end.

Why the Last Supper is not the Passover.

- [a] In verse 1 - it says that this was before the Feast of Passover.
- [b] The Passover was the next evening. There may have been lamb on the menu here, but it is not mentioned. The reason is that the Lamb of God is present, and is ready to be sacrificed on the day following, dying at exactly the time the first lambs are killed in the temple.
- [c] The Passover meal lasted all night with the house door locked, and no-one left the house until the following evening. Whilst this is like a Passover meal in some ways, it does not appear to have the lamb cooked in the Passover fashion. We have a shorter meal with Judas leaving early, early enough to go and buy something, as some of the disciples think. It would not have been possible to go out and buy anything on Passover night as nothing was sold as it was a holy day, and no-one was out and about for the three holy Sabbaths until Sunday morning – the Feast of Firstfruits – when people went about again.
- [d] This is a very relaxed meal Roman style, with the men reclining, which is in distinct contrast to the Passover which was a more formal meal.
- [e] Judas is released from the meal on the assumption that he is going to buy something for the Passover - verse 29.

This night is going to be the replacement for the Passover meal for the Early Church. At the feast of First Fruits there is going to be rejoicing in the Resurrection of the Lord.

When the Lord dies on the Cross most of the Jews are away having their lambs slain for the Passover meal. The Lord had to be off the Cross by the end of that day, 6pm, because of the forthcoming feast of Passover which starts that evening at 6 pm. All people had to be at home by 9pm, the end of the first evening of Passover night.

There are two other people who will miss their family Passover meal, for they obtain the body of Christ for burial; Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus. In **Matthew 12:40**, Jesus says that His body will be in the grave three days and three nights.

Christ appears from the evidence as I see it, from John's additional material here, to have died on a Wednesday. The Thursday was the feast of Passover, the next day, the Friday, was also a Sabbath being the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread, whilst the third day was a normal Saturday Sabbath. In the particular year that Jesus died there were therefore three Sabbaths in a row.

While His body is in the tomb He goes to Paradise to present Himself to the Old Testament believers whom He is going to take to heaven, make a victorious proclamation to the fallen angels who tried to thwart his Advent and are presently housed in Tartarus. He then rose from the dead to prepare for the Church. Whilst “Good Wednesday” appears to be correct, the "Good Friday" service we hold is legitimate as all have time off work which allows for them to attend services to hear the gospel.

We don't need to change the days we observe things, remember it is what we are remembering that is important, not the day we do it on!

The Day of the Crucifixion incorporates the trials and the beatings that the Lord received. When He gets to the Cross He has had no sleep for thirty six hours and neither have any of the disciples. The Lord died between the evenings in accordance with **Exodus 12:6**. It is between the evenings. This is not obvious in the KJV translation. The two evenings of a day were 6-9 that night and 3-6 the following day. He accurately fulfilled the Scripture and the feast day. His body was in the tomb three days and three nights.

On the Feast of First Fruits He arose from the dead His physical body having been transformed into a resurrection body. The reason the other Gospel writers say that this was the Passover meal, was that as the Lamb of God he fulfilled the Passover, and it was indeed their last "Passover" meal. From this Passover season everything is changed for them, and all is changed forever from this night and the following day.

Peter and John witness the trials of the Lord, John because of his relationship with the High Priest was in a safe place where he was known and wouldn't be questioned, whilst Peter was in a place where he should not have been. The rest scattered. The Passover night is spent in weeping. Unlike all the other Jews, they will not celebrate Passover with the nation, so it is natural that they would recall that night of their last supper as their Last Passover.

John is writing as a very old man. He had been walking with the Lord for over sixty years, and he reflects on the full significance of that night; he sees things that the other's accounts missed, but also he remembers things that only sixty years of reflection can bring to mind as the Holy Spirit moves upon him.

Verse 1. Now before the Feast of the Passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. 2. And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him; 3. Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God;

We have the perfect active participle of "oida" which means that He had the perfect complete knowledge about what is going on. He knows all that is going to happen. That purpose for which he had planned in eternity past will be fulfilled at this time. By the very words that the John uses to describe the Lord's mental attitude that night he indicates to us that God is in control. In our own crises we need to recall this truth.

The Lord Jesus Christ is in control of the whole plan. The Cross is not an accident. His hour has come. This is His purpose for coming into the world. The Cross is the central reason for His coming into the world. He did not come as a teacher or a healer; He came permanently to be our Saviour from sin. The word for hour means a specific or right time. This is absolutely the right time. The Lord is in control, He is working His purposes out.

"Hina" - a conjunction meaning here, "in order that", rather than, "that"; it is introducing a purpose clause. It was the purpose of God's plan that He should depart. "Metabaino" - means to depart and is in the aorist active subjunctive. This means to take a trip, to go from one place to another which is exactly what the Lord is going to do with His physical death. He is going to go from here to Hades. He is going to go to Paradise, Heaven and Tartarus.

This same Greek word can be used for our death. There is no middle ground for believers; there is no purgatory. **2 Corinthians 5:1-20**. We will be absent from the body and face to face with the Lord, the unbeliever is absent from their body and straight into Hell, where they await the opening of the Lake of Fire. **Luke 16:19-31, Revelation 20:11-15**.

This shows it is very important to look up the meanings of the Greek words to bring out the full flavour of them. The Word of God was given to us once and for all Jude tells us. There are no short cuts; you must study.

"Agapao" love, this is the unemotional, stable, caring love of God. The Lord's love for you remained totally stable through the Cross. It is of great comfort to realise that the Lord loves us unconditionally.

There is nothing that can separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord - **Romans 8:38-39**. This great stability is going to be demonstrated in the next 12-14 hours through the Cross. It confirms **Hebrews 13:8**.

In verse 2 it states that, "The supper being ended", is two genitive absolutes, which is the same as underlining powerfully in the Greek. It was a dramatic moment.

The devil "Diabolos" having put it in Judas' mind - "ballo" - he had thrown a thought to Judas, who had caught it and accepted it and would now set out to act upon it and betray the Lord of Glory. The thought was to betray the Lord. Judas could have rejected it, as it is in the aorist, active, subjunctive of "Paradidomai", with the subjunctive bringing out the element of choice. Evil was there at the last supper – and it was expressed in the free will choices of Judas to reject grace and truth right to the end.

The Lord made the issue for Judas absolutely clear, even giving him the "sop", the favoured portion given to the most valued or favoured friend at a meal. He made a choice and decided to follow the Satanic line. He has seen the miracles, heard the words preached, been with the Lord, received His unconditional love, looked like a believer, and yet he has rejected the gospel. He had to work really hard to go to Hell!

Once a person gets to that point of rejection, there is no evil that they will not do. In **John 16:8-11** the Holy Spirit can cancel out the works of Satan, but if a person sees the Cross and rejects, then they turn back into the darkness and are from that point of total rejection open to Satanic attack and control.

Judas was under conviction for three and a half years, but this night he made his decision, and it was a decision which set him on path of eternal death. He still could have been saved, even if he had repented truly after the betrayal, but he committed suicide rather than confessing, and so was lost forever.

Even before His death the Lord institutes a meal to commemorate His victory at that time. The Lord is therefore in control of the situation. At the last supper He introduces the concept of the bread and the wine being the representation of His body and blood that will be shed and given the next day.

According to **Exodus 12:3-4** everybody in Israel had to be invited for a Passover meal. Even if there was a destitute person in the streets they had to be invited in. Every Jew had to be covered by the provisions spoken of by the Passover meal.

In **1 John 2:2** it shows that the death on the Cross covered all people. They were not to be pressed to come in; they were asked rather than forced. If they did not come in they were not covered, and if they were the firstborn in the first Passover they died. Those who reject the Lord Jesus Christ on the Cross will face Him as judge at the Last Judgment.

The unbeliever is indicted at the Last Judgment because he did not believe in Christ while on earth, (**John 3:18, 36**) and is judged according to his good works, which will be demonstrated by the judge Jesus Christ as not being satisfactory to God.

The lamb was to be without blemish. They were checked for four days to ensure that no secret blemish had not been spotted by the priests. The Lord enters the Temple on Palm Sunday and dies on Wednesday having being inspected for four days in the trials as well as teaching in Jerusalem. He demonstrated so clearly that He was the Lamb of God so that even the centurion said, "surely this is the Son of God". **Hebrews 9:13, 14; 1 Peter 1:19, 20.**

The blood on the lintel in **Exodus 12:7** was in the form of a cross some 1500 years before the Cross. The lamb was to be grilled and eaten without gravy. There is no sop in the traditional Passover meal, as the "sop" was gravy scooped up in the pita bread of the day. Just another reminder that although there is the same basic Passover Meal format this isn't the traditional Passover meal – it will be after the Lord's death.

Verse 4. He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself. 5 After that he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.

At the end of verse 3 is a semi colon, this means that the next verses will carry on the theme. The foot washing incident is the ultimate in the Lord's humiliation, and it teaches us the mental attitude of the servant that He had, and that we must learn if we are to be like Him.

Here the Creator who had the power over all things became a creature, a house slave. He came down that He might go up. He comes as the Son of God, and He goes back as the Saviour of the World.

There was no doubt in His mind as to what He was doing. John was on one side of the Lord with Judas on the other. Everything that happened is burnt into his memory. The Lord was in control; He knew what He was doing

This verse in John's Gospel brings out the meaning of the doctrine of humiliation. It is also possible to tie in **Hebrews 4:15, 10:7, 2 Corinthians 8:9, 8:19**. He had absolute control to exercise power. The Lord went further than any Jewish man would have gone, as even a Jewish slave was excused from washing the feet. This was reserved for the Gentile slaves in a Jewish household.

Charles Fineburg states, "When the pre-existent and eternal Logos took on humanity he gave up the visibility of His glory. They could not have looked upon His unveiled deity. He gave up the independent exercise of His divine attribute being totally obedient to the Father's will and plan".

In verses 4-5 it is good enough that God could become a man, it is good enough that the God man should become a servant but it is amazing that He became a sacrifice. God is going all the way for us.

This is the servant hood of the Lord Jesus Christ. In the ancient world an inferior always did this to a superior. This was the Lord doing something that even a Jewish slave would not do, and this is His evidence for the servant mental attitude He challenged the disciples to have earlier.

The roads were the open sewers of these days. It was not a pleasant occasion to walk the streets of Palestine because they were stinking. This is why great epidemics went through the ancient world. To wash the feet was to wash off the excrement!

On Sunday the Lord has cleansed the Temple, on Tuesday night He is cleansing the feet of the disciples. This is a wonderful picture of the Lord dealing with sin in the nation and in the disciple's life. It is a reminder to us that we need moral and spiritual purity in our lives. We deal with our sins in order that our eyes might be opened. Sin hinders the Holy Spirit ministering to us and hinders our service.

We need to have the Lord remove the sins that we have when we walk in this world. You could not walk anywhere in the ancient world without getting your feet stinking. You cannot live in the devil's world without picking up things in the devil's world. We will sin and need to be cleansed. You needed to be cleansed every time you came to a house you wanted to enter.

In the Moslem area as well as in Polynesia you leave your shoes outside a building, and that is a good habit. In the ancient world if you were visiting houses five times in a day you would have your feet washed five times. As you interact with the world you will think things that you should not, you will say things that you shouldn't say; you need to be cleansed constantly or your sins will make you stink.

The Lord prepares everything for the foot washing. He removes his clothing and wears only a towel. This was the dress of the foot washing slave. The slave is going to get dirty as he washes the feet. The feet are going to be dried on the towel which is around Him. He provides everything to wash their feet - **1 John 1:9**.

As with forgiveness of sin, God has provided everything also. He has done all the work. We bow before Him and recognise that He has done all the work and we ask for forgiveness. He laid down His garments which is the same verb as used in laying down His life in **John 10:11, 15, 17**. Everything that the Lord is doing is a laying aside of Himself. This is a total commitment to the Father's plan. The Lord's obedience overcomes Adam's disobedience.

The same deliberate act is when He lays aside His life. It is voluntary. If anyone says that he does not need the foot washing he is a liar says John in **1 John 1:8, 10**. The disciples were in a state of shock and Peter spoke up as usual. At the cross He chose to wash their feet. We have to have our feet washed on a regular basis.

Verse 6. Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? 7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. 8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. 9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. 10 Jesus saith to him, He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. 11 For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

Peter says that the Lord will never wash his feet. Jesus replies that if his feet are not washed Peter has no part or fellowship with Him.

Note the perfect tense of Oida (to know) again – it has eternal consequences if Peter doesn't "know" this and apply this to his daily life. Also note that we are "washed" at salvation, with results that go on forever, but we need to daily deal with sins.

Literally Peter says that Jesus will never, not ever, not forever, wash his feet, a triple compound negative. You cannot say "no" any stronger than this. The Lord is very patient here. He puts Peter right on the spot and says that he must, otherwise he has no portion with Him. What we are talking about here is fellowship. This is the principle of **1 John 1:5-10**.

The person who refuses to confess their sins cannot have fellowship with the Lord and is therefore not effective. He/She is of no earthly good and is heading for the sin unto death. Those of no earthly use will be taken home to heaven early. Peter like many believers who are too proud to admit their sins, is in real danger here, but he will later confess his great betrayals of the Lord, and be forgiven. We all need to go before our Saviour and plead for forgiveness (1 John 1:9). There are a lot of believers who spiritually stink because they do not confess sins.

When he finally catches on in verses 9 and 10 he goes overboard, and it is critical that he does, for after his betrayal of the Lord he will, we suspect, reflect upon this incident and know he can be washed clean, even of his betrayal. He now suggests he bypass the foot washing and get a full shower. The Lord says that Peter does not need to be fully washed (saved) again, but there is one that does. The foot washing stands for confession. He is washed clean; he is saved by the blood of the Lord.

He is clean, saved, but he has dirty feet because of walking in the devil's world. This again shows that one is saved once and for ever; once saved always saved. However there is daily sin in your life that needs to be cleansed on a daily basis. The Lord cannot use you until you have sorted all your sin out. Daily washing is required.

1 John 1:5 - 10 - here we have people walking in the light. If they walk in the darkness they have erred and cannot have fellowship with God as God is light. The blood of Christ is the basis of our salvation and sanctification. If you find a person who does not think that they need to confess their sin, they are confused about the nature of spirituality and the defilement of daily sin, or they are a liar. The desire to confess your sin shows that the light is on in your life, as spiritual people are always very aware of their sinfulness.

Another area is that of dedication of people for service in the church such as a church worker, missionary or bible college student. This dedication service is so that they might be better prepared to serve the Lord. Do not confuse the dedication service with the confession service and the gospel/salvation service.

Evangelists often cause problems when they are having a poor response from a group for salvation, and may switch to a re-dedication service to get people to come up the front. This causes great confusion in people's minds. If no one responds to the gospel message send them out with the gospel ringing in their ears, but don't muddy the waters for everyone!

It is the efficacy of the Blood of Christ which effects salvation. If it depended on you, you would be lost. Jesus turned to the group again and says to Peter, "You are clean but not all". They all recognise that there is someone in the room who is not saved, but none of them knew who he was.

Verse 11 says He knew who would betray Him. This is a pluperfect active indicative of "oida". He knew perfectly in the past with the results that go on for ever. He knew active voice with the indicative mood giving the certainty of His knowledge. Here we have the fore knowledge of God.

Judas is going to freely choose. Here he was waiting to betray the Lord, secure money and secure a place in hell. The Lord had already washed Judas' feet at this stage. Judas got this close to salvation, but yet still resisted. He held out against the Son of Glory. But it will not be too late until he dies. Remember there is hope for the unsaved until they die, only at that point is their hope over.

Verse 12. So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? 13. Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. 14. If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to

wash one another's feet. 15. For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.

After this He asked them whether they knew what He had done to them. He then reclined again as they started to think and discuss His actions, which would have been shocking to them all.

They reclined Roman style and started eating again. He puts His clothes back on again, and gets ready to teach them about what He has done. Note the perfect tense – what He has “done” is forever in its scope and blessing to us.

He says that He is Lord and Master. This really shows the relationship that we should have with our Lord. We should not have a chummy relationship with the Lord. He should not be addressed as “Dear Jesus” or as a buddy. The Apostle John warns us against such arrogance. In Revelation 1 he falls on his face when the Lord appears. This familiarity with the Lord is a major error within the modern Charismatic movement.

The Lord's Hebrew name is Joshua is a very strong name (the Lord is salvation, is it's meaning). He is Jesus Christ our Lord. We should not forget it. He tells them that they ought to wash each other's feet. The mental attitude that you have seen in Him you ought to practice in your own life. Jesus gives the example that the master is not greater than the servant. Biblical Greatness is seen as humility in service is expressed.

When Peter and John saw this they recognised that as apostles nothing should be below them. As a servant of the Lord Jesus Christ nothing should be below you. We should be prepared to serve in the lowest position. Irrespective of what group you have got you minister to them to serve them. Nothing is to be beneath you. We should copy the Lord's mental attitude at all times.

Philippians 2:5-7 talks about what in Systematic Theology we call the “Doctrine of Kenosis”, with **John 13:15** tying in there. The Lord has set the standard for our attitudes and behaviour, and we should follow Him even unto death. For the early Christians this was a very real possibility. There is a growing possibility that we may face this end ourselves, as society becomes more decadent and more anti-Christian by the day. **Galatians 6:1** - we serve in love meekness and holiness. **1 Peter 5:6-10**, some people get the holiness without the meekness and humbleness. We must humble ourselves, and that means that no service task should be beneath our dignity. There is no such thing as the “dignity of the clergy”.

Verse 16. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. 17. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them. 18. I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me. 19. Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am he. 20. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

Do not look for position and honour in the Church, rather ask how you can serve your brethren. Be forgiving as the Lord is forgiving. As you go before the Lord in prayer make sure you go before others. As the Lord has forgiven you, you are obliged to forgive others. This is difficult when people have maligned you and run you down. We have to have a servant hood attitude.

In verse 18 the Lord speaks to Judas. As a minister you should realise that you should speak to your people and lovingly challenge them about their service for the Lord. Many times you will come across people who do not know the Lord and will not love you because they will not stand for it. Judas has walked with the Lord for three years but he has rebelled in his heart. Judas is going to make the final choice, which is going to put him under demon control, but the Lord remains loving and gracious to the end.

“Eklego” is the Greek word meaning to call or select, to give love to, to confer with favour. The Lord says that He knows whom He has chosen. He knew when He selected Judas what was in his heart. The Lord knows all the facts. The Lord has chosen Judas in love and he has been given every opportunity to be saved but he has rejected everything. In these verses we will see how far the Lord went to get him to respond but he did not. Judas is in the band, perhaps to prove, for all time, that all the evidence in the world is not good enough to wear down any person's determined rejection.

The Lord quotes from **Psalms 41:9** and shows this as a fulfilment of prophecy. The Lord offered the sop to Judas which made him an honoured guest. If you are a guest in an Arab country you will either sit cross legged on a cushion or recline. The host of the feast will give the best or first morsel to his honoured guest. This is what the Lord does to Judas. He gives him a bit of bread with the nicest portion of the meat.

The picture of the animal lifting the heel is the one of the ox kicking against nails in a plough. When the ox with a poor attitude kicked out at the plough it would kick these nails. Judas is rebelling and kicking against the Lord Jesus Christ. The sin of rebellion against love, mercy and grace is the sin of Satan, and Judas has joined Satan in this, and will keep right on rejecting it until the end.

Judas was the treasurer of the group, he was a “shalom friend”, and regularly hugged the Lord pretending love, yet he was a thief and finally a murderous traitor. He was treated with honour right to the end. Judas was at a place close to the Lord at the Last Supper. Having rejected the Lord, the Lord says “go” and he made his last irrevocable choice.

Satan now indwelt him to do his evil work. Remember that a person does not become demon possessed easily! You have to work very hard at evil to open yourself to Satanic or demonic possession. While the Holy Spirit works in a life that person is kept safe, but once they fully and finally reject the Lord, there is no protection left for them and they get what they have chosen.

In his ministry Judas was likely involved in miracle working, he had given the gospel - **Matthew 10:1 ff** - Freely he had received, freely he had given, and he clearly looked the part and the others were fooled by him, for none spotted he was a fake till the end. He is one of those of whom it says, that many will come before him who say that they have cast out demons and done miracles in His name but He will tell them to depart, and that He never knew them. **Matthew 7:13-23**.

You do not save people; it is the Holy Spirit and the Word of God which does that. (Let the people see the Lord when you minister to them).

We see cases in church history where people who had led others to the Lord were not converted until later. There are many people doing things in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, but they are not saved themselves.

Churches are full of people unsaved, reading the words of life but being themselves in death. Such people are like Judas, and they are not what they appear; Judas was a well greased hypocrite!

Judas is called the son of perdition, and so let us examine this phrase. The events of John 17 occur only a few hours after the last supper. Chapters 13-18 occur within 6 hours. He is called the son of perdition at this point, not because God said it in eternity past and he has not got a chance.

God did not predestine him to be the son of perdition, as that would make the righteousness of God evil. God however knew that Judas would have a negative attitude against the Lord Jesus Christ. Judas was lost because he by his own free will resisted and rejected the Saviour right to the end, not because the Lord knew he would and made it so!

Judas' death as described in **Matthew 27:1-10, Acts 1:15-20**, (discussed in a later volume) is not the result of double predestination, but of his own wilful disobedience to the will of God and his wilful rejection of the love of the Lord Jesus Christ for him. Some people nowadays say that if they could have walked with Jesus and experienced his teaching and seen his miracles they would be saved – yet the facts here tell us “no”.

You can tell such people that unless they believe your testimony they will not know Jesus, and that their eternal destiny is the lake of fire. The best parable to illustrate this is in **Luke 16:19-31**. John will comment on this in the last chapters of his Gospel, **John 20:30-31, 21:24-25**.

In the “spiritualist” so called churches many people will claim to have supernatural power to heal, but the fruit of the Holy Spirit is not evident in their lives, and they have a strange and false view of who Jesus is. These people always have healing or power messages. If a genuine Holy Spirit filled believer turns up to their meetings, they will be asked to leave, as their “spirit guides” cannot operate in the presence of the Holy Spirit. It is a clue to their real origin/source of power.

The power they have is not of God; it is of Satan. Remember Judas, and be thoughtful about some phenomenon we see today, where people appear to be believers yet may not be at all. Many of the non Christian religions have supernatural healings. Satan is a healer and probably enjoys swapping diseases around. You may in fact gain a disease from such “healing” meetings. A person could die of cancer due to this sort of satanic operation. Satan is a great counterfeiter, a great hypocrite (liar) from the beginning!

It is God's will that all might be saved, **Matthew 28:19, 20**. The blood of Christ cleanses from all sin. The Lord wants everybody to know that. There is the possibility that all might be saved. The Lord calls all to repent but those who resist the convicting ministry of the Holy Spirit will finally say "no", and are culpable.

APPLICATION

If you want to be effective in your life you need to walk in holiness. Peter jumps to the wrong conclusion here. A literal translation of Peter's statement is, "You wash my feet, no, not never". Peter was shocked, for he was seeing Jesus Christ as Lord doing what he would not have done as a simple man. In the ancient world as today a Lord does not wash the feet of an inferior.

This is true in the physical field but not in the spiritual. Peter is learning very slowly, and being foolish at times, just like us. Let us grow in the grace and knowledge of Christ as he did. Let us be thankful to Peter for this mistake, for through it the Lord taught us even more.

The Lord says that what I do now you do not understand, but even when you don't understand accept things. He tells Peter that he is totally and completely ignorant at this stage. He is not putting Peter down. This is where he is. "You presently do not understand anything of this but at a later date you will", Jesus says.

Just like Peter, we are going to go through God's Word and our Christian life, and find areas which we cannot understand at the moment. At that point we are to take the doctrine we do understand and apply it to our life and place the questions we have in our question book.

There will come a day when we do understand these things. Do not wait to fully understand everything before you apply them. Every question you have, He will answer, in His way and in His time. Do it and understand later. You may not understand some things until you meet Him face to face.

Many Christians are very arrogant. They think that unless you explain and they understand everything to their satisfaction they will not believe or act upon it. There are many things that are hard to understand, and the Lord wants us to move out in faith trusting Him. **2 Peter 3:9, 14-18**.

The issue to start off with is obedience. In the armed forces, that is the way it happens; the order is given, it is judged legitimate by the hearers and they obey it immediately. The Lord is saying, "Peter, now is the time to obey, later is the time for full understanding". God judges us on our obedience and not our knowledge. It is application that matters.

1 Peter 3:18 - Peter understood it later and urges us to apply this. The Lord who humbled himself is now exalted. We should let the mind of Christ dwell richly in us, and it will correct and guide us as we go.

The Holy Spirit within will always give us the desire to be cleansed of any sin that has caught us out. If you want to be in fellowship you need to be clean. **1 John 1:9**. God is not interested in filth. Cite the case it says. We are to, confess, Homologeo, or speak the same thing, agree with God that we have sinned, and claim His forgiveness. As far as the east is from the west that far have your sins been removed from you.

In **1 John 1:10** we see the danger of hypocrisy - if you think you haven't sinned you call God a liar. Peter realises that he needs to have his feet washed. We all need "our feet washed". In your preaching you must not confuse confession with salvation.

If you mix the two up you have the possibility of promoting Arminianism. If you are giving a gospel message make sure that it is a gospel message alone, don't confuse the picture by asking for "re-dedications". If a person is a believer they don't need to rededicate their lives to the Lord, they need to confess their sin before him, to "wash their feet"!

There are lots of people, like Judas, going to hell with self-righteous smiles in their faces until the very end of their life, when they face the fear of eternity that they didn't think would be as it now is for them. It is not hymn singing, praying in public, evangelising, nor miracle working (for Judas did all these things), it is the work of the Holy Spirit in the life which will set a seal on the believer's life. **Matthew 7:13-23**.

It is the fruit of the Holy Spirit in your life not signs and wonders that matters. It is your heart's love for the Lord and your hatred of sin that proves that you are a child of God. Too many are deluded about their wonderful lives and their "ministries", when they need to deal with their sins! **Romans 8:9**.

At that point they open themselves up for demon possession. Finally at death they will go to hell where they will await the Last Judgment.

The Holy Spirit will always convict, and we have God's word on that, **John 16:8-11**, but some people can and will resist the ministry of the Holy Spirit, and move towards the judgement. It is at that time that demon possession can occur. The effect is shown in **Romans 1:20-32, 1 Thessalonians 2:9-12**.

Everything that is powerful is not of God, everything that looks spiritual is not from God. There is a big error in some Pentecostal churches, where people see power and say, "these things are of God", but some may not be. Hear again and again the Lord's warnings in **Matthew 7:13-23** and be alert and discerning. If you are in a Bible believing church you should pray for the sick in accordance with the Scriptures, but also be advising them to go and see a good doctor as Paul did. If you are not careful you will have people going off to the "divine healers", who may not be "divine" at all.

God has power but so has the enemy, even though it is lesser power. What is possibly a "good thing" is not necessarily from the right source. Satan is an excellent counterfeiter. You will find many Judases in the church, and they are amongst the "make believers" in their dog collars. There are many people today who are making merchandise of God's people through the healing movement, and are good modern versions of this evil man, for they too "keep the purse"!

Verses 19 -22 Judas heard the Lord. The Lord was troubled, "tarasso", and this is the word for the stirring up of the pool, the stirring up of the emotions. This is not an angry God; this is deepest sadness at Judas' eternal fate. The Lord is disturbed that Judas is going to hell. There is a gospel message here. Within a day of this happening, he is going to be in hell. The grief of the Lord Jesus Christ is being felt for the unsaved. He is saying constantly, "Oh that they might repent and be saved!"

Remember, God is not willing that any should perish. **2 Peter 3:9**. He has provided salvation for all of them but they will not accept it. God's heart is one of loving concern for them but it is a heart that recognises choice. The Lord is going to pay for the sins of the world including that of Judas. This man is the most miserable of all in Hell and the most embarrassed, for he had 100% truth, and he walked away.

The Blood is shed and it covers all sin. The unbeliever sees the blood of Christ, rejects it and looks upon it as if it is nothing. They will be in the lake of fire because they do not care for Christ and His work. God takes no pleasure in the judgment of the damned. They are there because that is where they want to be; because they have done such a wicked thing in their treatment of the blood shed for them.

DOCTRINES

SALVATION: ATONEMENT - UNLIMITED ATONEMENT

1. Definition:

- a) The totally effective work of Christ on the cross to pay the penalty of sin on behalf of mankind.
- b) Atonement as a noun means reconciliation after enmity and includes reparation made for wrong or injury.
- c) The verb has several related meanings such as to be at one, to be in accordance, to make reparation or amends, to make up for errors or deficiencies, to reconcile.
- d) In the Old Testament, the true meaning of atonement is related to the Hebrew verb "to pass over, to cover" - it is also the word for 'pitch' used to seal Noah's Ark.

2. In Old Testament times, animal sacrifices were used to cover sin.

- a) God forgave and restored where sin was covered by the blood of animal sacrifices.
- b) However, the true basis for atonement was not found in these animal sacrifices. This is why the sacrifices needed to be repeated time and time again.
- c) Animal sacrifices were used as a cover for sin until the true sacrifice, Jesus Christ, could be offered on the cross.
- d) Atonement in the Old Testament refers to the use of animal sacrifices to picture the saving work of Christ.
- e) The two concepts of atonement (Old and New Testament) are brought together in **Romans 3:23-26**

3. Atonement is unlimited

- a) When Jesus Christ was judged on the cross for sins he paid for the sins of the entire human race, not just the elect. (**Romans 5:6, 2 Corinthians 5:14-15, 1 Timothy 2:6, 4:10, 2 Peter 2:1, 1 John 2:2**)
- b) "Limited Atonement", the concept that Christ died for believers only is incorrect.

4. Unlimited Atonement eliminates sin in the unbelievers' indictment at the Last Judgement.
 - a) When Christ died on the cross, He was judged for all sins of the human race.
 - b) Therefore the issue in salvation is not sin, but faith in Christ. People choose either to accept the work of Christ (**John 3:18, 36**), or their own "good" works to gain the approval of God.
 - c) Therefore, human good will be the basis of the unbelievers' indictment at the Last Judgement. (**Revelation 20:12**)

CHRIST TYPES: ADAM AND CHRIST CONTRASTED

1. ADAM produced sin and death (**1 Corinthians 15:22**);
CHRIST produced righteousness and life (**1 Corinthians 15:22**).
2. ADAM caused creation over which he was lord and head to become degenerate (**Romans 8:19-22**);
CHRIST brings unity with God and eternal life in the new creation of which he is Lord and Head. (**Ephesians 1:22, 23**).
3. ADAM caused the animal and material creation to be cursed (**Genesis 3:17**);
CHRIST will deliver the creation at the Second Advent (**Isaiah 11:6-9; Romans 8:19-22**).
4. ADAM was made by God a living soul (**Genesis 2:7; 1 Corinthians 15:45**).
CHRIST is the source of life, a life-giving Spirit (**John 1:4; 5:21; 10:10; 1 John 5:12; 1 Corinthians 15:45**).
5. ADAM was of the earth (**1 Corinthians 15:47; Genesis 2:7**)
CHRIST is the Lord of Heaven. (**1 Corinthians 15:47; John 1:1; Philippians 2:10, 11**)
6. Adam's creation was flesh. (**John 3:6**).
Christ's creation is spiritual. (**John 3:6**).
7. ADAM'S sin and its consequences are experienced by all, not on the basis of their individually 'doing sins like he did', but on the basis of their 'being in him' and 'his sin being imputed to them'. (**Romans 5:12**)
CHRIST'S righteousness and its imputation is experienced by all who have believed in Him, NOT on the basis of their 'doing righteous deeds like He did', but on the basis of their 'being in Him' and 'His righteousness being imputed to them'. (**Romans 5:17**)

CHRIST: KENOSIS OF CHRIST

1. Kenosis is an expression which means to "empty oneself" or "to make himself of no reputation."
2. Principle of Kenosis:- (**Philippians 2:5-8**)
3. Jesus Christ from eternity past always has been God. As such he is all knowing, he is all powerful, has everlasting life and many other absolute qualities. He was not created because he is eternal.
4. Jesus Christ chose to become a little lower than the angels and took on the form of man.
5. Adam the first man aspired to be God, the second Adam who is God divested himself of his deity (Kenosis) and became man in order to save mankind.
6. During his earthly ministry, rather than using his own absolute power he used the power of the Holy Spirit.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: CONFESSION AND FORGIVENESS

1. Forgiveness is by the death of Christ (**Matthew 26:28, Revelation 1:5**)
2. Divine forgiveness is to all who believe in Christ (**Acts 10:43, Acts 16:31**)
3. The penalty of sin was paid by Christ on the cross. (**Hebrews 9:22, 2 Corinthians 5:21**)

4. When a believer sins his fellowship with God is disrupted. God forgives these sins upon confession and cleanses from the unknown sins in the believer's life as well as known sins. **(1 John 1: 9).**
5. Jesus Christ is our propitiation. **(1 John 2:1, 2)**
6. In human forgiveness we are told to forgive others even as God has forgiven us (Ephesians 4:32). This can only be accomplished by the filling of the Holy Spirit. **(Ephesians 5:18, Galatians 5:22, 23)**
7. Steps towards restoration of fellowship
 - [a] Examine yourself for genuineness of motivation. **[2 Corinthians 14:5]**
 - [b] Act on what you see **[Romans 4:7-8]**
 - [c] Deal with any sin by confession. **[1 John 1:9, Psalm 66:18]**
 - [d] Forget the sin which you have confessed. Do not proceed into a pattern of guilt. **[Philippians 3:13-14, Psalm 103:10-12]**
 - [e] Resume your active spiritual walk. Avoid areas where you might be tempted by the sin which so easily besets us. **[Hebrews 12:12-13]**
 - [f] Be reconciled to others once you have been reconciled to God. **[James 5:16]**
 - [g] Get moving and grow up. **[2 Peter 2:17-18]**

CHRISTIAN LIFE – MENTAL ATTITUDE

1. Definition: Attitude or Mental attitude is the state of mind where the mind is set on a course of action on the basis of the whole function and thinking of the soul.
2. Every believer faces the inner conflict of divine versus human viewpoint. These two attitudes are at war in humanity in human history from the time of the fall. **(Isaiah 55:7-9)**
3. We are commanded to have divine viewpoint in our souls not the viewpoint of Satan (worldliness). **2 Corinthians 1:7, 10:5.** (via Doctrine in the Soul).
3. Attitude determines both the life and character of a person - what you think is what you are **(Proverbs 23:7)**
4. As Christians we are commanded to have our thinking in tune with the mind of Christ. Gods plan for our lives calls for a new attitude in our souls, a new viewpoint, without any human viewpoint or mental attitude sin **(1 Corinthians 2:16, 2 Corinthians 10:4-5 Romans 12:2, Philippians 2:5, 2 Timothy 1:7)**
5. Fellowship within a church is based on believers all being in tune with what the Bible teaches. **Philippians 2:2.**
6. Knowledge of the Bible (the mind of Christ, **1 Corinthians 2:16)** and control by the Holy Spirit renews the mind of the believer, giving divine viewpoint. **(Romans 12:2)**
7. The right mental attitude produces joy **(Philippians 2:2)**, confidence **(2 Corinthians 5:1, 6, 8)**, stability **(Isaiah 26:3-4, Philippians 4:7, 2 Thessalonians 2:2)**, true giving **(2 Corinthians 9:7)**, love **(1 Corinthians 13:5)**
8. Human viewpoint is called worldliness. **(Romans 12:2, Colossians 3:2)**
9. Evil is what you think as you are following Satan's policy. **Matthew 9:4, Galatians 6:3.** Mental attitude sins produce self induced misery. **(Proverbs 15:13)**
10. Without clear thinking there is conflict in the mind of the believer. **Isaiah 55:6-9, James 1:7-8.**

11. True stability of Character comes only this way. **Philippians 4:7, 2 Thessalonians 2:2.**
12. Giving is a mental attitude. **2 Corinthians 9:7.** Love is a mental attitude. **1 Corinthians 13: Deuteronomy 6:5, 10:12.**
13. Worldliness is a mental attitude: It is all non-grace thinking i.e. Anti Gods Plan, **Colossians 3:2.**
14. Confidence in service and living generally flows from having "Divine Viewpoint" which has other advantages such as
- [a] Stability in life - James 1:8
 - [b] Prosperity of soul - **Philippians 4:7**
 - [c] Giving to the Lord - **2 Corinthians 9:7**
 - [d] Spiritual rather than worldly - **Romans 12:2, Colossians 3:2**
 - [e] Purity rather than evil - **Matthew 9:4**
 - [f] No arrogance - **Galatians 6:1-5.**
 - [g] Inner beauty - **1 Timothy 2:9, 10, 15.**

HARMONY

JUDAS AND THE DEVIL

Now before the feast of the Passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him; Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God;

THE LORD WASHES THE FEET OF THE DISCIPLES

He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself. After that he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.

Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. Jesus saith to him, He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

THE SERVANT AND THE MASTER

So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, the servant is not greater than his lord; neither is he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them. I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me. Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am he. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

143 THE TRAITOR ANNOUNCED - JUDAS WITHDRAWS**MATTHEW 26:21-25**

21 And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. 22 And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I? 23 And he answered and said, He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me. 24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born. 25 Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

KEY WORDS

Eat	Esthio	Eat [Present Active Participle]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Verily	Amen	Truly
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
One	Heis	One
Shall betray	Paradidomi	Betray [Future Active Indicative]
Were Sorrowful	Lupeo	Sorrowful [Present Passive Participle]
Exceeding	Sphodra	Greatly, Exceeding
Began	Archomai	Begin [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Everyone	Hekastos	Everyone
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Infinitive]
Lord	Kurios	Lord, Master
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Aorist Passive Participle]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Dippeth	Embapto	Dip [Aorist Active Participle]
Hand	Cheir	Hand
Dish	Trublion	Dish
Same	Houtos	Same one
Shall betray	Paradidomi	Betray [Future Active Indicative]
Son	Uihos	Son
Man	Anthropos	Man
Goeth	Hupago	Go [Present Active Indicative]
Written	Grapho	Write [Perfect Passive Indicative]
Woe	Ouai	Woe
Betrayed	Paradidomi	Betray [Present Passive Indicative]
Had been	Eimi	Keep on being [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Good	Kalos	Good
Had not been	Ou	Not, No
Born	Gennao	Born [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Betrayed	Paradidomi	Betray [Present Active Participle]
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Aorist Passive Participle]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Master	Rhabbi	Teacher, Rabbi
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Said	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 21. And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. 22. And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I? 23. And he answered and said, He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me. 24. The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born. 25. Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

The phrase “as they did eat” means as they were in the process of eating Jesus said, “one of you will betray me”. The disciples became very emotional about it and felt very sorrowful and all of them said, “Is it I?”. The response of the soul is emotional while the response of the human spirit is more objective based on doctrine. The disciples are depending on feelings, rather than understanding that this is part of the death of the Lord, which he has been telling them about for the last three years.

Eating represents faith in Christ. There are a number of different things that are eaten at a traditional Passover, including the Passover lamb representing Christ as the Lamb of God, which takes away the sins of the world, unleavened bread, again representing Christ as the bread of life. There we also sauces into which the food was dipped, but the sauces and the nature of the food here is probably more expansive than just the normal Passover.

Jesus now says that the person who dips with Him is the one who will betray me. Judas dips into the bowl at the same time as the Lord, and therefore betrays himself. It may well be that the innocent ones are relaxed and listening to this statement from the Lord, while Judas, the guilty party is continuing to eat, to cover up his situation.

Jesus says that he will die, but woe unto Judas who will betray him, for it was better that he had not been born. Judas is going to die as an unbeliever, and go to the Lake of Fire. Jesus says that it is better not to have been born than to die an unbeliever. Judas is on his way to hell and still has time to be saved but he never gets round to believing in Christ. He is going to take his own life and is going to the Lake of Fire.

Judas then, bold as brass, with false piety, says to the Lord, “Master is it I?”, and Jesus says, “Thou hath said”, which is a Jewish idiom for, “Yes”. The word Master is a word acknowledging authority, but it is hypocritical here.

MARK 14:18-21

18 And as they sat and did eat, Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, One of you which eateth with me shall betray me. 19 And they began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one, Is it I? and another said, Is it I? 20 And he answered and said unto them, It is one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish. 21 The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it for that man if he had never been born.

KEY WORDS

Sat	Anakeimai	Recline, Lean [Present Middle Participle]
Eat	Esthio	Eat [Present Active Participle]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Verily	Amen	Truly
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
One	Heis	One
Eateth	Esthio	Eat [Present Active Participle]
Shall betray	Paradidomi	Betray [Future Active Indicative]
Began	Archomai	Begin [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Be sorrowful	Lupeo	Sorrowful [Present Passive Infinitive]
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Infinitive]
One after another	Heis Kath Heis	One after another
Is it I	Ego	I
Is it I	Ego	I
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Aorist Passive Participle]

Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Is	-	Not found in the original
Twelve	Dodeka	Twelve
Dippeth	Embapto	Dip [Present Middle Participle]
Dish	Trublion	Dish
Son	Uihos	Son
Man	Anthropos	Man
Indeed	Men	Truly
Goeth	Hupago	Go [Present Active Indicative]
Is Written	Grapho	Write [Perfect Passive Indicative]
Woe	Ouai	Woe
Betrayed	Paradidomi	Betray [Present Passive Indicative]
Good	Kalos	Good
Were it	Eimi	Keep on being
Had never	Ou	Not, No
Born	Gennaos	Born [Aorist Passive Indicative]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 18. And as they sat and did eat, Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, One of you which eateth with me shall betray me. 19. And they began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one, Is it I? and another said, Is it I? 20. And he answered and said unto them, It is one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish. 21. The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it for that man if he had never been born.

While they were eating dipping bread into the bowl during the meal itself Jesus announced that one of the twelve would betray Him. The words, “one who is eating with me”, are unique to the Gospel of Mark and related to **Psalms 41:9** where David laments that his trusted friend, who shared his table with him, has turned against him. To eat with a person and then betray him was considered the height of treachery.

The disciples are deeply troubled. One by one, even Judas, they seek to clear themselves. Literally the form of question in the Greek is “it is not I is it?”, each expecting a reassuring negative answer from Jesus. He declined to name the offender to the group, with the account given in Matthew apparently being made only to Judas. This is reinforced by the fact that when Judas left the room to betray Jesus, the disciples thought he had gone to buy things for the following day, as he was the treasurer for the group.

Jesus repeated his statement, that the betrayer was one of the twelve who was dipping bread into the bowl with him. His announcement to emphasize the treachery of the betrayal also gave that person, Judas, an opportunity to repent. In verse 21 Jesus confirms that he is going to the cross but in the second half of the verse he laments the fact that the person who betrays him is going to a Christless future. Christ’s death was according to the Plan of God. The betrayer was acting as Satan’s agent, and so awful a destiny awaits him, that Jesus says it would have been better if he had not been born.

LUKE 22:21-23

21 But, behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me on the table. 22 And truly the Son of man goeth, as it was determined: but woe unto that man by whom he is betrayed! 23 And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

KEY WORDS

Behold	Ido	Behold, Lo
Hand	Cheir	Hand

Betrayeth	Paradidomi	Betray [Present Active Participle]
Is	-	Not found in the original
Table	Trapeza	Table
Truly	Men	Truly
Son	Uihos	Son
Man	Anthropos	Man
Goeth	Poreuomai	Go [Perfect Passive Participle]
Was determined	Horizo	Ordained, Set out [Present Middle Indicative]
Woe	Ouai	Woe
Is betrayed	Paradidomi	Betray [Present Passive Indicative]
Began	Archomai	Begin [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Enquire	Suzeteo	Inquire, Question [Present Active Infinitive]
Among	Pros	Among
Themselves	Heautou	Themselves
Was	Eimi	Keep on being Present Active Optative]
Should	Mello	Desire, Intend [Present Active Participle]
Do	Prasso	Practice [Present Active Infinitive]
Such a thing	Touto	Thing

PERFECT TENSE VERB

POREUOMAI – DEPART, WALK, GO - Occurs 154 times in the New Testament. In **Luke 22:22** the sufferings and death of the Lord Jesus Christ were determined in eternity past as part of the Eternal Plan of God, but Judas betrayed him with the full consent of his will. That is why a Jesus said, “Woe to the man by whom He is betrayed”.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

21 But, behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me on the table. 22. And truly the Son of man goeth, as it was determined: but woe unto that man by whom he is betrayed! 23. And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

The one who was going to betray him was present in their midst. There are those who believe that Judas actually left the room before the institution of the Lord’s Supper that becomes our Communion statements. I think that may be accurate. John will give the chronological order of the events here; Luke above gives us those facts necessary for the purpose of his commentary.

John makes it clear that during the Passover the Lord took the sop and gave it to Judas and said, “That thou doest do quickly”. Every one of the disciples believed and realised that each of them was capable of denying and betraying the Lord. If we are honest we know that we also could betray Him also, and at times we are not as faithful as we later wish we had been.

Ancient Jewish readers would view betrayal by one sharing a meal as particularly scandalous because they viewed hospitality and the sharing of table fellowship as an intimate bond. This concept was so strong that even if an enemy ate salt at your table in the evening in the ancient world they were safe till morning.

Most people in ancient Judaism stressed both God’s sovereignty and human freewill, which they considered as complementary. Modern views that see them as contradictory elements are based more on Greek logic than on the Bible, and begin to be taught by Augustine of Hippo, then by the Reformers.

The sufferings and death of the Lord Jesus Christ were determined but Judas betrayed him with the full consent of his will. That is why a Jesus said, “Woe to the man by whom He is betrayed”. Though Judas was one of the twelve he was not a true believer, as seen amongst other places at the foot washing episode above.

JOHN 13:21-35

21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. 22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake. 23 Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. 24 Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. 25 He then lying on Jesus' breast saith unto him, Lord, who is it? 26 Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon. 27 And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly. 28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him. 29 For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. 30 He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night. 31 Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. 32 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him. 33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say to you. 34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

KEY WORDS

Had said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Participle]
Troubled	Tarasso	Trouble, Disturb [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Spirit	Pneuma	Spirit
Testified	Matureo	Testify [Aorist Active Indicative]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Verily	Amen	Truly
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
One	Heis	One
Shall betray	Paradidomi	Betray [Future Active Indicative]
Disciples	Mathetes	Disciple
Looked	Blepo	Look [Imperfect Active Indicative]
At one another	Allelou Eis	Another intently
Doubting	Aporeo	Look [Preset Middle Participle]
Spake	Lego	Speak [Present Active Indicative]
Was	Eimi	Keep on being [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Leaning	Anakeimai	Reclining [Present Middle Participle]
Bosom	Kolpos	Chest
Loved	Agapao	Love [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Beckoned	Neuo	Signal [Present Active Indicative]
Should ask	Punthanomai	Ask, Enquire [Aorist Middle Infinitive]
Should be	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Optative]
Spake	Lego	Speak [Present Active Indicative]
Lying	Epipipto	Lying [Aorist Active Participle]
Breast	Stethos	Breast, Chest
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Lord	Kurios	Lord, Master
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Present Middle Indicative]
Is	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Shall give	Epididomai	Give to [Present Active Indicative]
Sop	Psomion	Sop
Have dipped	Bapto	Dip [Future Active Indicative]
Had dipped	Embapto	Dip [Aorist Active Participle]
Gave	Didomi	Give [Present Active Indicative]
Son	-	Not found in the original
Satan	Satanas	Satan
Entered into	Eiserchomai	Enter into [Aorist Active Indicative]
Said	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Thou doest	Poieo	Do [Present Active Indicative]

Do	Poieo	Do [Aorist Active Imperative]
Quickly	Tachion	Quickly
No man	Oudeis	No one
At the table	Anakeimai	Reclining [at the table]
Knew	Ginosko	Knew, Perceived [Aorist Active Indicative]
What Intent	Tis	What, Why
Spake	Epo	Speak [Aorist Active Indicative]
Thought	Dokeo	Think [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Had	Echo	Have and hold [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Bag	Glossokomon	Purse
Said	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Buy	Agorazo	Buy from a market [Aorist Active Imperative]
Those things	-	Not found in the original
Have need	Echo Chreia	Require [Present Active Indicative]
Against	Eis	Before
Feast	Heorte	Feast
Should give	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Poor	Ptochos	Poor, Destitute
Having received	Lambano	Receive [Aorist Active Participle]
Went out	Exerchomai	Go out [Aorist Active Indicative]
Immediately	Eutheos	Immediately
Was	Eimi	Keep on being [Imperfect Active Indicative]
Night	Nux	Night
Therefore	Hote	When
Gone out	Exerchomai	Go out [Aorist Active Indicative]
Said	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Now	Nun	Now
Son	Uihos	Son
Man	Anthropos	Man
Glorified	Doxazo	Glorify [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Glorified	Doxazo	Glorify [Aorist Passive Indicative]
God	Theos	God
Glorified	Doxazo	Glorify [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Glorify	Doxazo	Glorify [Future Active Indicative]
Straightway	Euthus	Immediately
Glorify	Doxazo	Glorify [Future Active Indicative]
Little Children	Teknion	Little Children
Yet	Eti	Still
Little while	Mikron	Short time
Am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Seek	Zeteo	Seek [Future Active Indicative]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Go	Hupago	Go [Present Active Indicative]
Cannot come	Dunamai Ou	No power [Present Middle Indicative]
Come	Erchomai	Come [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
New	Kainos	New
Commandment	Entole	Commandment
Give	Didomi	Give [Present Active Indicative]
Love	Agapao	Love [Present Active Subjunctive]
One another	Allelon	One another
Loved	Agapao	Love [Aorist Active Indicative]
Love	Agapao	Love [Present Active Subjunctive]
Shall all men	Pas	All
Know	Ginosko	Know [Future Middle Indicative]
Are	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Have	Echo	Have and hold [Present Active Subjunctive]
Have love	Agape	Love

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 21. When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. 22. Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

The Lord was troubled, "tarasso", this is the word for the stirring up of the pool, the stirring up of the emotions. This is not an angry God. The Lord is disturbed that Judas is going to hell. There is a gospel message here. Within a day of this happening he is going to be in hell. The grief of the Lord Jesus Christ is being felt for the unsaved. He is saying constantly, "Oh that they might repent and be saved!"

Remember as stated in **2 Peter 3:9**, "God is not willing that any should perish". He has provided salvation for all of them but they will not accept it. God's heart is one of loving concern for them but it is a heart that recognises choice. The Lord is going to pay for the sins of the world including that of Judas.

Limited atonement is not supported by the Lord's heart tears here, and we need to examine our own hearts, and ensure we have a love for the lost that is like the Lord's, for no follower of the Lord can rejoice in any sinner going to Hell. The blood is shed and it covers all sin. The unbeliever sees the blood of Christ, rejects it, and looks upon it as if it is nothing. They will be in the lake of fire because they do not care for Christ and His work. This should be sadness for us also – for their fate is terrible beyond words – they have chosen it, and they may have hurt us, but we will pity them if we have Jesus heart towards the lost.

God takes no pleasure in the judgment of the damned, and neither ought we to. They are there because that is where they want to be and there will be no distress at their eternal judgment in the eternal creation; because they have done such a wicked thing in their treatment of the blood shed for them, but there is no gloating over the lost. **Revelation 20:11-15, 21:8, 27.**

Verse 23. Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. 24. Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. 25. He then lying on Jesus' breast saith unto him, Lord, who is it? 26. Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

Peter asks who the traitor is, as he has his sword now, and is ready to run him through.

We need to know, like John, that we are someone who Jesus loves, but also we need to know that there are many traitors, equally dangerous to the ministry you are involved with as Judas was. Peter beckoned to John, as he was not close enough to hear what the Lord was saying. Only John heard the words of the Lord saying, "that it is the one I give the sop to". Everybody else was talking, and could not hear this quiet comment.

John is the only one that records it in the Four Gospels. Jesus gives the sop to Judas, and John and the Lord only know the meaning of it.

This also shows that the Lord Jesus Christ knew Judas' thoughts, and it is the last chance for him to repent. He takes the sop, and he plays the hypocrite right to the end. Satan now enters into him. There was demon possession at the Last Supper.

Verse 27. And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly. 28. Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him. 29. For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. 30. He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night.

Jesus said to him to do what he has to do quickly. Judas is now open to satanic possession. The Lord is ordering not only Judas, but Satan as well, to proceed at full speed if he dares, showing that the Lord is in full control of the situation here not the enemy.

"In Him" we are always more powerful than Satan, and God's Plan will succeed. No one is demon possessed unless they are in a position of maximum rebellion against the Lord. John remembers as he writes looking

back 60 years that picture of Judas walking out into the darkness. The door opened into the darkness and Judas stepped out into the dark and they never saw him again...

Here we have a picture of exactly what is going on spiritually. Judas gets up, satanically possessed now, walks out into the darkness and closes the door. He has made his decision. For Judas it was not only night but eternal night. He is in hell today waiting for the Light of the World to come and judge him for eternity. It is hard to imagine what Judas will be like at the Great White Throne. What can any unbeliever say before God? Demons want to have a body to indwell, and they take a heavy price for it. Mark Chapter 5.

Unbelievers only can be indwelt by a demon as a result of a maximum rejection of God, but even then the demon possessed people we have met in the Gospels are all able, even to the last moment to cast themselves before the Lord and be saved and delivered. For believers, **1 Corinthians 6:19** applies - your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit and even though you can grieve and quench the Holy Spirit He is still there.

A believer cannot be indwelt permanently by demons because of what Christ has done for you. Unbelievers can be totally possessed and sometimes are. People that get involved with spiritualism, and those that get involved with drugs are liable to be demon possessed. Drug taking has always been involved with demonism and opens the door of the soul to it. When the gospel has declined in influence in a nation, drug taking increases. Behind every pagan religion is a demon, so those who chase the thrills of Eastern Religious cults open themselves to demonic activity.

Whilst the unbeliever is under the convicting ministry of the Holy Spirit under **John 16:8-11** the demon is kept under control, and may be forced to leave if the person responds to the gospel message. The Holy Spirit can always break through any demonic hold, and convict them of sin.

The Lord told Judas, who was indwelt by Satan to go, and they obeyed. Only John has been close enough to hear what has been said. Satan is a defeated foe, and even at this point must obey, because even here at the very point of betrayal, the Lord Jesus Christ is in control.

There are no accidents; the Lord did not go to the Cross because of a mistake, He went in accordance with the eternal plan, and he was giving the orders. The Romans, the Chief Priests, and the Sanhedrin are not in control. The person who is in control is the Lord Jesus Christ. The Lord's glory is going to be seen more and more.

The drama of the Last Supper never left John. As the door closed on Judas and he stepped into the dark John knew something evil was unfolding, yet the Lord was in control. John felt the sadness and power of it all those years later. This was the last time John ever saw Judas alive. They had ministered together, and Judas had been a traitor all along, and this was the last act. Get the feeling behind John's words here.

Judas was after power he thought he could wield if he forced Jesus hands to become the king, and he made the choice. The next time Judas came before the Lord it was to betray Him and the last time we hear of him is of his suicide in the valley of Kidron.

Many people think that they have 'become lost', but we are all born lost. You are on the way to hell from birth. The question is, are you going to keep on that path, or are you going to make the only decision that is going to prevent you going there. You must be born again. **John 3:15-36**.

John is writing his Gospel from the perspective of an evangelist. He does not want the door to close on anyone as it did on Judas. If it does, he wants it to be because they have known the truth fully, so they have no excuse.

Verse 31. Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. 32. If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him. 33. Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say to you. 34. A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35. By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

The Christian life should be glory, glory, and more glory. As things in the world get darker we should shine out brighter. The time is drawing to a close. The Lord is in complete control of history, and we should live as if that is true now, for it still is!!! The Lord is glorified, and so our job is to lift Him up!

In verse 33 the Lord calls the disciples little children, teknon - This is a mixture of affection and reference to age. He tells them, "I am going away and you will not be able to follow me". **John 7:34, 8:31**. If something is repeated in the Scripture underline it very carefully and get the point.

In verse 34 having told them that he is going away, He now gives a commandment which they have to apply once He has gone. This is the standard operating procedure for the Church Age. You are to love one another as He has loved you. It is the present, active, subjunctive of the word for love, agapao. The present tense means that you are to do it continuously, active voice, you are to do it, subjunctive mood in this case, is in the form which makes it a plea, "Why don't you do it?", I want you to do it, but it recognizes the potential that you may not do it.

It is an order given with a smile of love, but the subjunctive mood indicates the free will of the person. Keep on loving one another. The subjunctive mood notes however that, "Maybe you will, maybe you will not". The Lord has an unconditional love for others, and so should we. We are supposed to forgive our brothers and sisters who confess their sins against us, an infinite number of times, and towards the unbeliever we are to show our love through the giving of the gospel whenever they will hear us.

APPLICATION

Though he acted within God's plan, Judas remained personally responsible for his actions.

Remember the Bible teaches that the unbeliever is condemned on the basis of their good works not their sins - **Revelation 20:11-15**. They are going to hell on the basis that they have decided that they can stand on their own good works and do not need the Lord Jesus Christ. All the good things that they have done will not add up to the good thing that Jesus Christ has done for them on the Cross. People will say to you, when they hear the gospel that they want to do things their way, not Jesus way. That was Judas' fatal decision.

Their judgement will be that they will see, too late, that their way does not get them anywhere near to God. Their pride, in all the things that they thought they could do to impress God will be the very basis of their condemnation. Like Cain, they despise the blood sacrifice, and like Cain they will be judged. Revelation 20 makes it quite clear that God is not impressed by any woman or man's good works. The unbeliever will not be in hell because of their sins, which were paid for in full at the Cross, but for their arrogant rejection of the Lord. They will be in hell because they have rejected the one that paid for their sins, and insulted the one who gave all for them.

We have to go through the Scriptures carefully and give the message accurately. Hell is a waiting place. The names Hades, Gehenna, and torments are for the place where the unbelievers wait until the Great White Throne Judgment, and the resurrection of the lost, where at the end of time they will be judged and cast into the Lake of Fire with Satan and his angels. Judas is in the place of torments today with all other unbelievers, and is awaiting the great white throne judgment. With all unbelievers he will stand before the One he betrayed and rejected, but what torment he will feel, having been so close to glory, and yet selecting hell!

After the departure of Judas the atmosphere in the upper room changes. The Lord is able to give the rest some doctrines now, as the unbeliever has gone. He can now teach the believers new deep wonderful truths.

The Bible makes it quite clear in Corinthians that Satan is an "angel of light". He is a counterfeiter with counterfeit gifts spirituality and power. **2 Corinthians 11:11-15**. Satan will try to get unbelievers into places of power in the church so they can deceive more effectively. Why are they there personally?

Dr McEwan having spoken to many down the years has identified several reasons. Firstly they are there for social and business reasons; it is good for their social lives and businesses to have Christian "networks" of pleasant people. Most are deists, as are the demons, **James 2:19**, so believe in the "Great Architect", and enjoy the quiet stability and decency of the church in the midst of the moral chaos of the world. They will be keen participants in all social activities, and may be moral, but lack the true "Fruit of the Holy Spirit.

The second group are those who want a drug free and pleasant social network for their children and a moral platform for social action initiatives for the less fortunate in society. They want preaching on the safe Jesus of liberalism, not the real historical Jesus of the Bible; they do not want evangelical and doctrinal truths taught nor preached; they want a comfortable faith, as the religious unbelievers did in Jeremiah and Isaiah's day.

In the case of many churches and denominations, they are neutralised because of the presence of so many religious unbelievers. Many have an unbeliever in the pulpit with a dog collar on, or the deacons or elders are unbelievers. This will cause great deadness, deception, or dissension. With any unbelievers in the church, you have to ensure that you convert them or get rid of them. There are techniques to lean on people in a Christian way, and you need to do it strongly, by simply preaching the truth – they will hate it and reveal themselves quickly. If you do it in a wrong way you will lose your spirituality and God will judge you, and the unbelievers will still be in positions of power to stop genuine evangelical work!

The new commandment which the Lord gives is not for Judas; for no religious unbeliever can accept or truly apply this. It is the basis of church age spirituality, the new commandment of love. Judas was the secretary and treasurer of the organisation and as such a key man, but he was an unbeliever, and so unable to live in love. Once you have a key unbeliever out of the church, the log jam clears, the water starts flowing again, and the rest can centre their spirituality in their joint love for the Lord and each other.

We should not be legalistic – that's the enemy's fruit. The standard of our relationship with other believers is the standard of the Lord's relationship with us. The Lord wants us to be like Him and to be seen to be like Him. The things that impressed the Romans so much were the loyalty of the Christians to one another. If you stab each other in the back you are insulting the Lord's love.

You need to go on the offensive with love. Agape love is ultimate concern. It is concern for their ultimate destiny and how they are going to be in eternity. It means that you will do anything for that Christian so that they will be able to grow spiritually and that you will not do anything that will not assist them to grow spiritually. "By this shall all men know that you are His disciples – that you love one another".

Be practical and be without hypocrisy. For example, you should not read your Bible at work when you should be on the job. It is sinful to pray and preach in such circumstances, for you are being paid to work for your boss, and unless you do your job as unto the Lord, you cannot witness to the Lord with honour and respect to those around you, and to him.

As an evangelist you should be able to pray at all times; while you are looking at people and talking to them, and while you work. People will know you are His disciples when you have love coming out of your life. In your love you will be practical, you will go and do things which will help people rather than mouth platitudes at people.

If you come across a brother who needs a meal you invite them home to have a meal. If their garden is overgrown with weeds you help and clear the weeds, praying for them as you do, and speaking words of encouragement to them as you do.

You give counsel with practical help. The motivation is love, and you will have concern for that person's weakness for their sanity and their spirituality. You may have to work on all three areas at the same time. All three are then an expression of love. The Lord says for us, as deacons and deaconesses, to get our hands dirty. The practical and the spiritual go together and they both show love.

Many problems within the church centre in pride; when a person says, "this is beneath my dignity", they are a hypocrite not a disciple! If they will not help in the Sunday School, they are not to expect to help in the church! **1 John 4:7-12, 1 Corinthians 13:4-8.**

It is very important that we respond to problems in our lives from our human spirit rather than our soul as we are able to see objectively the problems as part of the Plan of God. Responding from the soul will cause us to become very emotional and be less effective in relating to the problems.

In contrast we see the Lord Jesus Christ facing the horrors of the Cross in relation to His position with the Plan of the Father. He comes under tremendous pressure but fulfils the plan completely. All the disciples ran away, the angels could not assist Him, God judged Him yet he was able to shout out in triumph, "It is finished", "Paid in full", before He dismissed His spirit.

The Passover is a ritual, and this "Last Supper", built around a Passover like meal is a wonderful time of fellowship, and yet one of the people involved is not saved. Ritual without reality is meaningless.

We also see that it is better never to have been born, if you are not born again from above.

PROPHECY**BETRAYED BY A FRIEND****PROPHECY**

Psalm 41:9 (1000 BC): Yea, mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath lifted up his heel against me.

1. Judas Iscariot had been a disciple of the Lord for his public earthly ministry. Yet it was he who betrayed Jesus for 30 pieces of silver. His very name is now synonymous with treachery.
2. At the last supper the sop, a piece of bread dipped in the juices of the Passover lamb, was offered to Judas. This was the last opportunity for Judas to repent of his ways. He, however, disappeared into the night to betray the Lord.

FULFILMENT

John 13:18,19,21,26,27 (32 AD)- I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me. 19 Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am he. 21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. 26 Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon. 27 And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

DOCTRINES**ANGELS: COUNTERFEITS OF SATAN**

1. Doctrine of Demons (**1 Timothy 4:1**)
2. Communion Table (**1 Corinthians 10:20-21**)
3. Ministers (**2 Corinthians 11:12-15**)
4. Gospel (**2 Corinthians 11:3-4**)
5. Spirituality (**Galatians 3:2-3**)
6. Righteousness (**Matthew 19:16-28**)
7. Power (**2 Thessalonians 2:8-10**)
8. Gods (**2 Thessalonians 2:3-4**)
9. Religions (**Matthew 23**)

ANGELS: CROSS AND SATAN

1. With His death on the Cross Christ dealt with sin as a whole. (**Colossians 1:15-22, 1 John 2:2**)
2. With the removal of the sin barrier Satan's power was negated. (**John 12:31, 16:11, Colossians 2:14, Hebrews 2:14,**)

3. Judgement upon Satan has been pronounced but the sentence has not been executed, he is still prince of this world. (**2 Corinthians 4:4, Ephesians 2:2**)
4. He is still the deceiver and liar who leads astray foolish believers (**1 Peter 5:8-9**)
5. The cross is God's grace provision for the salvation of all who will believe in the Lord. Satan's attack is the philosophy of works, promoting the idea that man can do without the need of a Saviour. (**Ephesians 2:8-9**)
6. Satan's judgement has been progressively revealed:-
 - a) In the Garden of Eden. (**Genesis 3:15**)
 - b) At the Cross. (**John 12:31**)
 - c) In the Tribulation. (**Revelation 12:7-12**)
 - d) At the Second Advent. (**Revelation 20:1-3**)
 - e) At the Last Judgement. (**Revelation 20:10**)
7. Satan's rebellion centres on two sins, pride and lying. (**Isaiah 14:12-24, Ezekiel 28:17, John 8:44**)
8. God's plan calls for sin to be removed and with it Satan's power. The victory on the Cross will lead to the glory of God and the proclamation throughout all eternity of the perfect justice of God. (**1 John 3:8**)

ANGELS: DEMONS

1. Occult practices such as astrology, divination and spiritism are condemned by the scriptures (**Leviticus 19:31; Deuteronomy 18:9-12**). This was punishable by death in Israel. (**Leviticus 20:27**)
2. Demonism has exercised much influence in history (**Ezekiel 21:21, Daniel 10:13**). Evil is associated with the rule of demon possessed kings. (**2 Kings 21:1-17**)
3. The judgement of demons involved the destruction of demon possessed people and religious systems associated with idolatry (**Isaiah 19:1-3, cf. Deuteronomy 7:5**)
4. Many nations have been destroyed for demon practices.
 - a) Canaanites (**Deuteronomy 18:9-12**)
 - b) Babylonians (**Isaiah 46:1-7, 47:1-15**)
 - c) The judgement of Egypt's first born included the judgement of demons (**Exodus 12:12**)
5. The return of nations to the battle of Armageddon is by demon influence (**Revelation 16:13-16**).
6. Satan and the occult forces will be imprisoned during the Millennium (**Isaiah 24:21-23; Revelation 20:1-3**).
7. Demons are called "hairy ones" (**Leviticus 17:7**), destroyers (**Deuteronomy 32:17**) and demons.
8. Demons
 - a) seek to possess men or animals (**Mark 5:1-13**).
 - b) deceive man into false doctrines (**1 Timothy 4:1**).
 - c) believe and tremble (**James 2:19**).
 - d) speak both truth and lies (**2 Chronicles 18:21; Acts 16:17-18**).
9. Satan rules the demon world (**Matthew 12:24-28**). Demons have a hierarchy (**Daniel 10:12, 13, 20; Ephesians 6:12**).
10. Sacrificing to idols is worship of demons (**Deuteronomy 32:17, Psalm 106:36-38, 1 Corinthians 10:19-21**).
11. The following activities can lead to demon possession (for the unbeliever) or demon influence (for the believer):
 - a) Submission to demons through idolatry (**1 Corinthians 10:19-21**) and occult practices such as mental telepathy, clairvoyance and spiritism (**Deuteronomy 18:9-12**).
 - b) Specific dedication of one's body to demons, such as the Hindu soma and shamanism.

c) Any practice in which you "lose control" of your mind and senses, such as drugs and alcohol (**Galatians 5:20**, the Greek word for "sorcery" is "pharmakeia"), meditation and trances, hypnotic rhythms in music and dance.

d) Sexual cults, such as the asherah (**Judges 6:25-28, 2 Kings 21:3**)

12. When people reject God, He may allow Satan and demons to administer discipline, even death (**John 8:44, 1 Corinthians 5:5, 1 Timothy 3:6-7**).

13. Demon influence can cause abnormal psychological behaviour, physical strength, sickness, etc (**Mark 5:1-5, Job 2:6-8**)

14. Jesus Christ has conquered all demon power (**Matthew 10:8**).

ANGELS: SATAN - ADVERSARY

1. SCRIPTURE - Genesis 3; Isaiah 14; Ezekiel 28; Matthew 4; Revelation.

2. BIOGRAPHY

Satan is the most beautiful creature ever to be created by God. He is an angel who rebelled against God before the creation of man (**Isaiah 14:12-15**). Originally he was the covering angel, the personal attendant of Jesus Christ in the very throne room of God. Unlike God, Satan is a created being and as such can only be in one place at any one time. He is attended by a vast number of angels (called demons) who have given him unswerving allegiance. After the creation of man, he tempted Adam and Eve to be as gods and to know good and evil by disobeying God. Satan then became the ruler of this world (**Genesis 3:1-7**). He attacked the human race in many ways prior to the birth of Jesus Christ. Throughout Jesus Christ's life, Satan attacked the Lord. Since Christ's victory at the cross he attacks believers. Satan still has access into heaven where he accuses the brethren. Halfway through the tribulation period Satan is thrown out of heaven (**Revelation 12:7-9**). This causes him to intensify his attack on the human race. During the millennium he is confined to the bottomless pit, allowing a perfect environment on the earth (**Revelation 20:1-3**). After a brief rebellion at the end of the millennium (**Revelation 20:7-10**), Satan is condemned to the eternal lake of fire which was created for the devil and his angels.

3. EVALUATION

Satan is called:

- a) The destroyer (**Revelation 9:11**).
- b) The accuser of the brethren (**Revelation 12:10**).
- c) The adversary (**1 Peter 5:8**).
- d) Beelzebub, prince of devils (**Matthew 12:24**).
- e) The deceiver of the whole world (**Revelation 12:9**).
- f) The great dragon (**Revelation 12:9**).
- g) An enemy (**Matthew 13:28, 29**).
- h) The wicked one (**Matthew 13:19, 38**).
- i) The father of lies (**John 8:44**).
- j) The god of this world (**2 Corinthians 4:4**).
- k) A murderer (**John 8:44**).
- l) The prince of the power of the air (**Ephesians 2:2**).
- m) The ruler of this world (**John 12:31; 14:30**).
- n) The ancient serpent (**Revelation 12:9**).
- o) The tempter (**Matthew 4:3; 1 Thessalonians 3:5**).
- p) A blinder of minds (**2 Corinthians 4:4**).
- q) A roaring lion (**1 Peter 5:8**).

4. PRINCIPLES

- a) Believers are in Christ and therefore in a position of supremacy over Satan (**Romans 8:37**).
- b) Satan was defeated at the cross once and for all (**Colossians 2:14, 15**).
- c) He can therefore only use devices and schemes, trying to convince the believer that he can still win the battle against God.
- d) Satan, through religion, tries to get man to work independently from God.
- e) A Christian out of fellowship can promote principles proposed by Satan (**Matthew 4:8-10; Mark 8:33**).
- f) Satan will use Scripture slightly changed, or added to, to try and confuse believers and lead them astray (**Matthew 4:3-10; cf. Psalm 91:11,12**).

- g) If Satan the adversary is resisted he will flee from you (**James 4:7**).
- h) Knowledge and application of the Scriptures is essential in understanding the wiles of the devil (**Ephesians 6:11**).

ANGELS: SATAN'S DESTINY

1. Satan is called a "prince" indicating that he had his own power and followers. (**John 12:31, 14:30, 16:11, Ephesians 2:2, 2 Corinthians 4:4**)
2. Yet he is still a creature, and is still ultimately subject to God (**Job 1:12**)
3. At the cross, Christ defeated Satan, as his main power was through sin and death. (**John 12:27-32, Romans 5:12, 1 Corinthians 15:54-56, Colossians 2:14-15, Hebrews 2:14-15**)
4. God purpose with the world is not yet complete - therefore the enforcement of Satan's defeat will not take place until the end of the Millennium (**Hebrews 1:13, Revelation 20:10**)
5. Satan's final judgment is sure:-
 - a) When he fell he was condemned, this was before (**Genesis 1:2**).
 - b) In the garden the certainty of God's judgment was announced. (**Genesis 3:15**)
 - c) The Cross was his final defeat. (**John 12:31, Colossians 2:14-15**)
 - d) In the midst of the Great Tribulation his access to heaven will be stopped. He will no longer be able to slander believers. (**Revelation 12 :7-12**)
 - e) At the Second Advent he is arrested and bound. (**Revelation 20:1-3**)
 - f) After the Millennium he is briefly released to lead the last great rebellion against God, and is finally cast into the Lake of Fire. (**Revelation 20:10**)
 - g) There are therefore four falls of Satan:-
 - i) from his place in eternity past to the earth with access to heaven.
 - ii) then that access is denied causing him to be restricted to the Earth.
 - iii) he is then contained in Hades for a thousand years.
 - iv) then his final fall into the Lake of Fire.
6. Satan has six abodes in his journey from the throne room of God to the Lake of Fire.
 - a) The Throne of God - **Ezekiel 28:12**
 - b) The Mineral Garden of Eden - **Ezekiel 28:13**
 - c) The Atmospheric Heavens - **Ephesians 2:2, 6:12**
 - d) The Earth - **Revelation 12:7-12**
 - e) The Abyss - **Revelation 20:1-3**
 - f) The Lake of Fire - **Revelation 20:7-10**

ANGELS: SATAN'S STRATEGY AND TACTICS

1. Believers are warned against him and his tactics. (**Ephesians 4:27, 6:11-13, James 4:7, 1 Peter 5:8**)
2. We must be ready and alert. (**2 Corinthians 2:11**)
3. Satan is a deceiver and a counterfeiter. He uses deception - not obviously wrong or sinful - but very subtle changes to the truth (**Genesis 3:1**). Remember, a counterfeit looks like the original.
4. Satan is described as an "angel of light" - often seeming attractive and "good". (**2 Corinthians 11:14**)
5. His tactics
 - a) Towards unbelievers.
 - i) to blind them regarding the gospel. (**2 Corinthians 4:3, 4, 2 Thessalonians 2:9, 10**)
 - b) Towards believers.
 - i) Satan seeks to hinder our growth and witness. (**1 Peter 5:8**)
 - ii) Satan will mislead into false doctrine and legalism. (**1 Timothy 5:14-15**)

- iii) He persuades believers to ignore the will of God through disobedience (**Genesis 2:17, James 4:7-8**)
- iv) Satan often attacks our assurance of salvation so that we doubt God.
- v) Worry (**1 Peter 5, 7-9**)
- vi) Fear of death. (**Hebrews 2:14-15**)
- vii) He accuses believers of sin both to God and to the believer (using guilt). (**Revelation 12:9-10, Job 1:6-11**)
- viii) He takes our focus off Christ by getting eyes on self (**1 Corinthians 1:10-11**), on people (**1 Corinthians 1:12**), on things (**Hebrews 13:5-6**)
- ix) When we don't allow the Holy Spirit to control our lives, we open ourselves up to Satanic attack. (**1 Corinthians 7:5, 2 Corinthians 2:11, 1 Timothy 5:14-15**)
- x) The Lord will allow Satan to attack a believer as discipline for unconfessed sin. (**1 Timothy 1:20 cf. 2 Corinthians 12:7**)
- xi) Satan cannot indwell or possess a believer, only beguile them. (**Galatians 3:1**)

c) Towards the world in general.

i) The World - Satan tries to deceive the nations. (**Revelation 20:7-10**)

STRATEGY

Whilst God is trying to call out personnel for the angelic council Satan is trying to confuse and blind minds as to what God's plan is. He does this by deceit. He tries to keep the gospel from the unbeliever and to keep doctrine from the believer so that they will not grow.

His other strategy is to try and eliminate Israel by pogroms and anti-Semitism. It is said that Christ will gather the Jews not Zionism as is happening at the moment. If he could destroy all the Jews which he cannot he will destroy the Plan of God.

TACTICS

These are the techniques used by Satan to try and achieve his strategy. His main tactic is implied in John 8:44 where he is seen as the father of lies. There is no truth in Satan. He is a liar and has been from the beginning. The only truth is Christ the Word. Any one who deliberately distorts the truth is working for Satan. Rejection of Christianity is a rejection of the truth. By application all religions are therefore false.

Christians as a whole have failed to move out into all the areas of life and therefore have not claimed leadership in these areas and they have been forfeited to the unbeliever. Such areas as literature, history, philosophy, music, science, and the like.

The Christian should be a conqueror ideologically and not militarily. During this time Satan tries to cause conflicts such as creation versus evolution, relativism versus absolute values, internationalism versus nationalism. In the international area he causes war and strife.

Satan tries to confuse the believer. In **Romans 6:6-11** the Bible says that the sin nature shall not have dominion over you. We are told to resist the devil and he will flee from you. Sometimes when we resist it does not work because the temptation is from your sin nature. You need to apply relevant Scriptures to your situation.

Satan will try and mislead you in the area of divine guidance. Satan can set up situations that will lead you out of the geographical will of God which can even extend to martyrdom.

You need to do things in the Lord's timing. Satan also perverts Scripture as seen in Luke 4:11 with the temptation of the Lord Jesus Christ where he misquotes **Psalms 91:10,11**

When people wrote the Scriptures they did not sit around with a blank mind. They used their minds and were led by the Holy Spirit as to what to write. When they had visions or dreams their minds were not turned off. When confronted by the Lord Jesus Christ Paul spoke to Him, He used his mentality.

In **2 Corinthians 11** ministers can act as messengers from Satan. Part of the Satanic attack is to get people to look inwardly rather than at their position at the right hand of the Father. With the case of suffering and sickness its source is sometimes difficult to determine as it can be the purpose of God or it can be an attack of Satan. This is hard to discern.

Often the more spectacular manifestations is the method used to distract one from more important things such as studying and applying the Word.

With regards to the Word we have the teaching of false doctrine such as saying that Christ did not actually die on the Cross, that He was not truly human nor divine.

In relation to the gospel we have the picture in the parable of the Sower and the Seed of the bird coming down and taking away the seed that is sown. In regard to worship he will mock God through senseless words. **Matthew 16** tells of Christ commanding Peter to get behind him as Peter is enthusiastic but has wrong concepts which Jesus saw as Satanic in origin as they did not conform to the Word of God. In Acts 5 Satan filled the heart of Ananias and Sapphira. He works in the children of disobedience.

Spiritism and Occultism is something that the Christian should not dabble in. In Deuteronomy 18:9 the Jews were told not to seek guidance from spiritism or occultism. The main attack on the church nowadays is not through cults but through spiritism and eastern religions and drugs. This is an attempt to break down the mentality of the soul. By these means you are opening the person up to demonic forces.

ANGELS: SATAN'S WORK

1. Satan's sphere of operations among mankind. (**Psalm 109:6--13**)
 - a) Satan blinds mankind to the truth of the Word of God by means of religion. (v.7)
 - b) He has the power to shorten life. (v 8a)
 - c) He can remove persons from a place of authority (v 8b)
 - d) Satan can kill (v 9)
 - e) He can persecute children (v 10)
 - f) He can remove wealth (v 11)
 - g) Satan can turn people against each other (v. 12)
 - h) He can cut off man's posterity to the second generation (v. 13)
2. Satan as a killer
 - a) He has the power of death (**Hebrews 2:14, 15**)
 - b) Killed Job's children (**Job 1:12, 18, 19**)
 - c) Motivated Cain to murder Abel (**John 8:44, cf. 1 John 3:12**)
 - d) Often administers the sin unto death (**1 Corinthians 5:5**)
3. Satan as a source of disease
 - a) Was responsible for Paul's "thorn in the flesh" (**2 Corinthians 12:7**)
 - b) Produced illness in Job (**Job 2:6-8**)
 - c) Uses his demons to inflict diseases (**Matthew 12:22, Luke 13:16, Acts 10:38**)
 - d) Causes certain types of deafness, dumbness, paralysis and crippling effect by means of demon possession (**Matthew 4:24, 12:22, Mark 9:17, 18**)
 - e) When demon possession causes the affliction, the removal of the demon or demons produces an instant cure (**Matthew 10:1, Mark 1:32-34, 6:13, Acts 8:7, 19:12**)
4. Satan as an instrument of discipline
 - a) Desired to discipline Peter (**Luke 22:31, 32**)
 - b) Was authorised to discipline the Corinthian adulterer (**1 Corinthians 5:5**)
 - c) Was called upon by the Apostle Paul to administer extreme discipline to Hymenaeus and Alexander (**1 Timothy 1:19,20**)
 - d) May become involved in the discipline of ministers and deacons (**1 Timothy 3:6, 7**)
 - e) Attacks through a believer's lack of forgiveness and orientation to grace (**2 Corinthians 2:10, 11**)
5. Satan as a healer
 - a) Healing was a temporary spiritual gift before the completion of the Canon of Scripture (**Acts 19:11, 12, cf. Philippians 2:27, 2 Timothy 4:20**)
 - b) God still heals today (**Philippians 2:27**)
 - c) Since Satan possesses the power of disease he often counterfeits healing by the removal of demons (**Matthew 12:24, 24:24, 2 Thessalonians 2:9, Revelation 16:14**)
6. Characteristics of Demon Possession

- a) Loss of individuality: the demon-possessed person no longer has control of faculties of the soul (**Mark 5:1-13, Luke 8:27, 9:39, 40**)
 - b) Abnormal behaviour:
 - i) Convulsions (**Mark 1:26, 9:20, Luke 4:35**)
 - ii) Violence (**Matthew 8:28**)
 - iii) Abnormal strength (**Mark 5:4, Luke 8:29, Acts 19:16**)
 - iv) Raving (**Mark 5:5**)
 - v) Foaming at the mouth (**Mark 9:20**)
 - vi) Nakedness (**Luke 8:27**)
 - c) Loss of health:
 - i) Dumbness (**Mark 9:17, Luke 11:14**)
 - ii) Deafness and dumbness (**Mark 9:25**)
 - iii) Blindness and dumbness (**Matthew 12:22**)
 - iv) Epilepsy (**Mark 1:26, 9:20, Luke 4:35**)
 - v) Mental illness (**Mark 5:15**)
7. Demon possession explains:
- a) So called divine healing
 - b) Alleged speaking in tongues
 - c) Faked contact with the dead (**1 Samuel 28**)
 - d) Success of self styled exorcists
 - e) Rise of certain world leaders (**2 Thessalonians 2.9, Revelation 16:13, 14**)
 - f) Cause of some wars (**Revelation 20:8**)
 - g) Reincarnation
 - h) Fortune telling (**Acts 16:16**)

ANGELS: SATAN AND SATANIC ATTACK

1.- Pre Adamic

Original Creation	Genesis 1:1	Perfection and unity.
Creation of Satan	Ezekiel 28:13-15	Created the most beautiful creature, a genius.
Fall of Satan	Isaiah 14:12-15	"I will" 5 times. Satan sets himself up as God.
1/3 of Angels follow Satan	Revelation 12:4	
God's Judgement	Matthew 25:41	Lake of fire created for Satan and his angels.
Satan appeals		Man created with a free will to show the fairness of God's judgement.

Man having been created, Satan wages war firstly to get man to sin, secondly having had a Saviour promised to attack the line of Christ, thirdly an attack on the Saviour until He completed His work, fourthly to attack the Word of God and the individual believer.

2. - Stage 1 - Innocence-Sinfulness

	Scripture	Remarks
Man created	Genesis 1:26, 27	God provides everything. One tree a test of free will.
Woman falls	Genesis 3:1-6	Through ignorance of God's Word
Man falls	1 Timothy 2:13, 14	Man chooses deliberately to go against God's provision.
Salvation promised	Genesis 3:15	

3. - Stage 2 - Attack on the Line of the Saviour

Object:- If Satan can prevent the Saviour being physically born he has proved that God does not keep His promise in **Genesis 3:15** and is therefore not perfect.

Attack 1. Cain kills Abel (Attack on the **Genesis 4:8, 9** An unbeliever kills a believer but Seth,

seed of the woman)		another believer is provided for the line of Christ.
Attack 2. Infiltration of Fallen Angels. (Attack on the humanity)	Genesis 6:1-8	Infiltration until only Noah's family left as the humanity. Flood removes angel/men demons incarcerated in Tartarus (Hades)
Attack 3. Tower of Babel (Attack on nationalism)	Genesis 11:1 -7	An attempt by Satan to bring in the Millennium without God. The original U.N. God forms nations and confuses their tongues.- Tower of Babel.
Abraham promised the Saviour will be descended from him.	Genesis 12:1-3	Attack on the line of Abraham.
Attack 4. Pharaoh of Egypt.	Exodus 1:22	Using Pharaoh by ordering the slaughter of the male Jews Satan attempts to eliminate the Jews.
David promised a King descended from him will reign forever	2 Sam 7:12-16	Satan now attacks the descendants of David
Attack 5. Against the Kings of Judah	2 Kings 22:1, 2	Josiah, boy King of Judah divinely protected comes to throne at age of 8 after coup d'etat eliminates every other member of the royal line.
Attack 6. Against the Jews	Esther 3:6	Satan attempts to destroy the Jews using Haman. Haman eventually executed.
Attack 7. Against Jerusalem.	Isaiah 37:36	185,000 Assyrian troops under Sennacherib killed by God outside Jerusalem.

4. Stage 3. Attack on the Person of Christ

Attack 1. Possible stoning of Mary	Matt 1:18-20	The nobility of Joseph defended the as yet unborn Jesus.
Attack 2. Herod the Great.	Matt 2:16-18	Satan using Herod attempts to eliminate the Christ child by murdering all the young males in Bethlehem. Joseph takes Jesus to Egypt.
Attack 3. Temptation in Wilderness	Matt 4:9	A sinner cannot redeem other sinners. Satan offers the crown (Millennium) before the cross. Jesus follows God's plan.
Attack 4. Temptation not to go to the Cross.	Matt 16:21-23	Jesus follows God's plan although the cross was obnoxious to him.
Attack 5. Attempt to stone Jesus.	John 8:59	It was prophesied that the Saviour would die on wood. Stoning would have cut across this prophecy.
Attack 6. Attempt to tempt Jesus down from the cross.	Matt 27:40	If Jesus had come down from the cross there would have been no salvation.
Attack 7. The drugged wine.	Matt 27:34	Gall was a drug which if Jesus had accepted it would have impaired his free will and there would have been no salvation.

5. Stage 4. - Attacks since the Cross.

Attack 1. Against Scripture.	Attempting to get false books accepted in the canon of Scripture. Liberalism and Moderism, Humanism and Evolution.
Attack 2. Revival of Roman Empire	Under Charlemagne in 800 and Charles V in 1500. Roman Catholic Church.
Attack 3. Massacre of Jews.	Hitler's final solution attempts to eliminate Jews. No Jews no Kingdom for Jesus to reign over. Inquisition, Crusades, Russian pogroms.
Attack 4. One World Government.	Revival of the Tower of Babel concept under the League of Nations and U.N.
Attack 5. Socialism.	Satan's millennium.
Attack 6. Persecution.	Nero, Reformation, Inquisition

6. Strategy of Satan at the Present Satan's strategy is divided into 3 sections.

(a) Towards unbelievers. -

To blind them regarding the gospel (**2 Corinthians 4:3, 4, 2 Thessalonians 2:9, 10**)

(b) Towards believers.

He accuses believers. (**Revelation 12-9, 10, Job 1:6-11**)

He persuades the believers to ignore the will of God through disobedience (**Genesis 2:17**), through worry (**1 Peter 5, 7-9**), ignoring doctrine (**1 Chronicles 21:1**)

He seeks to entice the believer from the will of God. (**James 4:7, 8**)

He seeks to destroy the believer's focus by getting eyes on self (**1 Corinthians 1:10, 11** on people (**1 Corinthians 1:12**) by getting eyes on things (**Hebrews 13:5, 6**)

To get the believer frightened of death. (**Hebrews 2:14, 15**)

(c) Towards the world in general.

Satan tries to deceive the nations. (**Revelation 20:7-10**)

Principle:- The more you know about the Word of God the more you will be able to be effective as a Christian. cf. Jesus in **Matthew 4**.

ANGELS: SATANIC ATTACK ON BELIEVERS

1. As believers we battle two enemies; the Old Sin Nature from within (Romans 7:18, 8:8, Galatians 5:16-19) and Satan without. (**John 8:44, 1 John 3:8**)

2. We must know what Satan is up to and learn his strategies so that we might be ready and alert. (**2 Corinthians 2:11**)

3. Satan's most potent attack is to install false pastor teachers within the church who teach just enough false doctrine to sidetrack foolish believers. (**2 Corinthians 11:13-15**)

4. Satan attacks believers' assurance of salvation.

5. He also accuses believers of sin both to God and to the believer in the form of guilt. (**Revelation 12:9-10**)

6. Satan wants us to trust our feelings; God wants us to trust His Word. (**Romans 8:1**)

7. Satan lures believers away from the Word (Genesis 3:4) whilst God wants believers stabilised upon His Word. **(Isaiah 26:3)**
8. Satan hinders believers from doing the geographical and operational will of God.
9. Satan will do all he can to hinder the believer's growth: **(2 Peter 5:18)**
 - a) by getting the believer's eyes off Christ and onto self, others or circumstances
 - b) by encouraging lust for material things over spiritual growth
 - c) by encouraging mental attitude sins.
10. Satan is the author of sin and the founder of fear. We are not called to fear but to faith. **(2 Timothy 1:7)**

ANGELS – SATANIC REVIVAL

1. Satan has evangelists. **(2 Corinthians 11:13-16)**
2. These evangelists preach another gospel. **(2 Corinthians 11:3-4, Galatians 1:6-9)**
3. Behind every satanic revival is satanic doctrine. **(1 Timothy 4:1)**
4. Satan has a communion table. **(1 Corinthians 10:19-22)**
5. Satan has counterfeit righteousness in his religious system. **(Matthew 23:1-36)**
6. In the satanic revival he has a smokescreen. **(2 Corinthians 4:3-4)**
7. Satan has an angelic organisation. **(Ephesians 6:12)**

GOD: CHARACTER OF GOD

1. Whilst God is three persons all three persons have exactly the same essence or character:

a) SOVEREIGNTY

The Father **(Ephesians 1:11 , cf Isaiah 40:8, Matthew 6:10, Hebrews 10:7, 9)**

The Son **(John 5:21, Revelation 19:16)**

The Spirit **(1 Corinthians 12:11 , cf Hebrews 2:4)**

b) RIGHTEOUSNESS

The Father **(John 17:25)**

The Son **(Luke 1:35, Hebrews 7:26, 2 Corinthians 5:21)**

The Spirit The Holy Spirit

c) JUSTICE

The Father **(Job 37:23, cf 8:3)**

The Son **(Acts 3:14, John 5:22, Revelation 19:11)**

The Spirit **(Nehemiah 9:20)**

d) LOVE

The Father **(John 3:16)**

The Son **(Ephesians 5:25, 1 John 3:16)**

The Spirit **(John 16:7-11, 1 Corinthians 2:10)**

e) ETERNAL LIFE

The Father **(John 5:26)**

The Son **(Micah 5:2, cf John 1:1-2, 1 John 5:11)**

The Spirit **(Isaiah 48:16)**

f) ALL-KNOWING

The Father **(Hebrews 4:13, cf Matthew 11:27, 1 Peter 1:2)**

The Son **(John 18:4, cf Matthew 9:4, John 2:25, 1 Corinthians 4:5)**

The Spirit (**Isaiah 11:2, cf 1 Corinthians 2:11**)

g) EVERYWHERE

The Father (**2 Chronicles 2:6**)

The Son (**Matthew 28:20, cf Ephesians 1:23**)

The Spirit (**Psalms 139:7**)

h) ALL-POWERFUL

The Father (**Mark 14:36, cf 1 Peter 1:5**)

The Son (**Hebrews 1:3, cf Matthew 24:30, 2 Corinthians 12:9, Philippians 3:21**)

The Spirit (**Romans 15:19**)

i) UNCHANGEABLE

The Father (**Hebrews 6:17, Psalm 33:11**)

The Son (**Hebrews 13:8**)

The Spirit (**John 14:16**)

j) TRUTH

The Father (**John 7:28, John 17:3**)

The Son (**1 John 5:20, cf John 1:14, 14:6, Revelation 19:11**)

The Spirit (**1 John 5:6, cf John 14:17, 15:26, 16:13**)

GOD: ELECTION AND PREDESTINATION

1. The Biblical concept of predestination does not conflict with human freewill.
2. Christ was predestined for a specific purpose from eternity past - to go to the cross and be raised to glory (**Isaiah 42:1, 1 Peter 2:4-6, Acts 2:23**)
3. All members of the human race are potentially elect by the Father under the concept of unlimited atonement. (**2 Peter 3:9, 1 John 2:2**)
4. When a person trusts in Christ for salvation, he is united with Christ and therefore shares His election and destiny (**1 Corinthians 1:2, 30, Romans 8:28, 32, Ephesians 1-4**)
5. Election is closely linked with foreknowledge. In eternity past, God knew who would believe, He therefore predestined them, called them, and they were saved (**Romans 8:29-30, 2 Timothy 1:9**)
6. Therefore, election and predestination applies to the believer only. No person is predestined for hell - it is a choice of freewill (**John 3:18, John 3:36**).
7. Election is a present and future possession of every believer. (**John 15:16, Colossians 3:12**)
8. Election is also the foundation of the universal church. (**1 Thessalonians 1:4**)
9. There are five Greek words used in conjunction with predestination.
 - a) Pro Orizo - to predesign (**Romans 8:28, 29, Ephesians 1:5, 11**)
 - b) Protithemi - to predetermine (**Romans 3:25, Ephesians 1:9**)
 - c) Prothesis - a predetermined plan (**Romans 8:28, 9:11, Ephesians 1:11, 3:11, 2 Timothy 1:9**)
 - d) Proginosko - to foreordain, to preordain. (**Romans 8:29, 11:2, 1 Peter 1:20**)
 - e) Prognosis - foreknowledge or predetermined purpose (**Acts 2:23, 1 Peter 1:2**)
10. The life of Judas is a good illustration of predestination and freewill.
 - a) God's call is to all people, His desire is that all will be saved. (**Matthew 28:18-20, John 3:16 1 John 2:2, 3:23**)
 - b) God is long suffering towards the lost, not willing that any should perish. (**2 Peter 3:9**)
 - c) God's call is to all, but people must respond. (**John 3:36, 16:8-11**)
 - d) God's call is of love. (**Jeremiah 31:3, John 3:16**)
 - e) Those who resist become hardened in their souls and open to Satanic influence or possession. (**Romans 1:20-32, 2 Thessalonians 2:9-12**)

- f) Judas was chosen in love by the Lord (**Matthew 10:1-4, John 13:18**) and received the sop of the honoured guest and sat at the Lord's right hand at supper.
- g) However Judas was a thief and a traitor. (**John 12:6, 13:18**)
- h) As an unsaved man he was involved in evangelism. Others were probably saved through his reading of the word but he was not. (**Matthew 10:1-8**)
- i) He became the Son of Perdition by his decision, he could not blame anyone else (**John 17:12**)

CHRISTIAN LIFE: LOVE

1. Love for God is total appreciation for all He is and has done.
2. Words for love in Greek language
 - a) eros (sexual love) not used in the New Testament
 - b) storge (comradeship) not used in New Testament
 - c) agape (concerned love for others, great esteem for the loved one, reverence, a love that springs from adoration and veneration, and is a love of the will that chooses the loved one and devotes self to them to the exclusion of lesser objects. It may mean a self denying and compassionate devotion to the loved one)
 - d) phile (a love that embraces and kisses. This love is that of the affections and speaks of friendship and all one will do for a friend).
3. Our Lord makes it clear to Peter in **John 21: 15-19** that he wants Peter to love him with agape love that flows from a deep occupation with the Lord. Agape, as a love of the will, must work out in service of the Lord, and this will express the believers love (agape) for other believers also.
4. Do not love of the things the world has to offer **1 John 2:15-17**.
5. True love of God will always lead to love of the brethren. **1 John 1:3 -11, 1 John 3:1-3, 10, 4:7 -12, 19,**
6. Love is expressed in worship and in service. **1 John 5:1-5**.
7. Love for God will flow and grow from knowledge of his word. **1 Corinthians 2:9**.
8. This deep love will be expressed in witness for the Lord to others, **2 Corinthians 5:14**.
9. God loves every believer with perfect and unchanging love because we are united with His beloved Son.
10. It is also noted that the unbeliever has "agape" love for darkness rather than light **John 3:19**
11. Love for others is an important feature of the Christian life.
12. There are three types of love:-
 - (a) love for God.
 - (b) love for your spouse.
 - (c) love for other members of the human race.
13. It should be noted that only in type (b) is the body involved. The rest involve the soul or soul and spirit only.
14. LOVE FOR GOD
 - (a) Love for God is a response to the love of God. (**Deuteronomy 6:5**)
 - (b) The capacity for this love depends on your maturity. (**Philippians 1:20, 21; Ephesians 3:17-19; 1 John 4:17-18**)
 - (c) For the Church age believer love for God occurs first through the filling of the Spirit. Confession of sin is therefore critically important. (**Ephesians 5:2, cf. 5:18**)

- (d) Jesus Christ is the initiator of love of God through grace. **(Ephesians 5:25-27; 1 John 4:8-10; 4:19)**
- (e) The believer loves God using his free will.
- (f) The believer who does not love Christ is under a special curse and perpetual discipline. **(1 Corinthians 16:22)**
- (g) Love for God is the true motivator for working for God such as witnessing. **(2 Corinthians 5:14)**
- (h) This love is initiated by grace and increased in the believer who has a gracious attitude towards God and mankind. **(Daniel 9:4; Psalm 31:23; 119:132; 1 Corinthians 2:9)**
- (i) Love for God was commanded to all Old Testament saints. **(Deuteronomy 6:5; 10:12; 11:1; 11:13)**
- (j) Love for God is the basis of all true happiness as well as capacity for loving members of the human race. **(Deuteronomy 30:16)**
- (k) Love for God provides courage in battle. **(Joshua 23:10-11)**
- (l) As we see God through his Word it is impossible to love God except through his Word. **(Psalm 119:165-167, 1 Peter 1:8)**

15. LOVE FOR YOUR SPOUSE

- (a) This is love for a member of the opposite sex designed by God for you in eternity past unless you have the gift of celibacy. **(Song of Solomon 8:6-7)**
- (b) It is as strong as death and is a provision from God.
- (c) Death does not destroy this love. **(Ecclesiastes 9:5-6)**
- (d) This type of love is exclusive to one person. **(Proverbs 5:18-19)**
- (e) This type of love is protective both in absence **(Song of Solomon 1:13, 4:6)** and in presence. **(Song of Solomon 2:4)** The man is a banner of protection to the woman.
- (f) Love for your spouse illustrates relationships with the Lord. **(Ezekiel 16:8, Ephesians 5:23-33)**
- (g) Mental sins attack all forms of love. **(1 John 5:18)**
- (h) God has set aside time in each life for love. **(Ecclesiastes 3:8)**

16. LOVE FOR OTHERS

- (a) Love for others has great stability and power. **(2 Samuel 1:26, Proverbs 27:9, 10, John 15:13, Galatians 5:4)**
- (b) Love for others provides pleasant and relaxing environment. **(Romans 13:10, Proverbs 10:12)**
- (c) Love for others is free from hypocrisy. **(Romans 12:9)**
- (d) Love for others is outgoing and objective. **(Galatians 5:13, 2 Samuel 1:26)**
- (e) Love for others promotes orientation to grace. **(Philemon 9-12)**
- (f) Love for others has enemies and can be destroyed by:-
 (i) Mental attitude sins. **(Job 19:19, Proverbs 16:28)**
 (ii) Sins of the tongue. **(Proverbs 17:9)**
 (iii) National catastrophe. **(Jeremiah 6:21-23, 20:4-6)**
- (g) Love for others can be counterfeited. **(Proverbs 19:6-7)**

(h) Love for others can be removed because of divine discipline. (**Psalm 38:11, 88:18**)

17. We are recipients of Gods love (AGAPE=ultimate concern) through the cross. **1 John 4:10, 19, John 3:16.**

18. We must give out the gospel to all that they might see Gods love towards them **Matthew 28:18-20.**

19. Our attitudes to one another should show Gods love in action. **1 John 4:12, John 13:35.**

20. Love is commanded of all believers towards other believers, **John 13:34, 1John 4:7, 8, Philippians 2:2-8.**

21. This only becomes possible as we grow in Christ, as his word changes our minds giving us the capacity for love. **1 Peter 3:18.** Love is a fruit of the Spirit.

22. Agape love in the believer puts the eternal issues of the other persons life ahead of all else, so that all is done to them with their eternal state in mind. **1 Corinthians 13:1-8.**

23. We show our love towards believers by our practical concern for their spiritual growth and physical welfare. **2 Thessalonians 3:15, James 5:13-16, 1 Timothy 5:1-3, 1 Thessalonians 5:11-24.**

24. We have strength to love others through the word in which we see that we are under the much more love of God: We are in the beloved and the beloved is in us, we are always recipients of His love. **Romans 8:37, John 13:1, 20:2, 21:7,20, 15:9, Ephesians 2:4, 5:2, 25, Revelation 1:5.**

SALT

1. Salt is a preserver and speaks of eternal life.

2. Salt is a seasoner and speaks of the richness of life designed by God for every believer.

3. Salt is the antithesis of leaven. Leaven corrupts, salt preserves.

4. The believer on earth is the salt of the earth in **Matthew 5:13.** Salt is an unseen preserver.

5. Since believers living in nations are often the reason for the preservation of the nations, when people turn away from God, nations are destroyed.

6. The salt of the covenant - when a contract was drawn up in the ancient world both parties ate salt to seal the contract. The eating of salt depicts receiving salvation.

7. In the ancient world, if your guest ate salt with you, you guaranteed to protect him from harm while he was with you.

UNBELIEVER

1. God is Holy and cannot compromise with sin or evil. (**Psalm 22:1-3, John 1:5**)

2. Sin is solved at the Cross for all. (**1 John 2:2**)

3. The way is therefore open to all who will believe. (**John 3:16, 36, Acts 16:31**)

4. Those who reject Christ are without hope, promise and God in the world. (**Ephesians 2:12, Romans 5:14, 17, 6:23**)

5. We are born dead to God. (**Psalm 51:5**)

6. It is only through Christ that we can be born again. (**John 14:6**)

7. The unbeliever spurns this grace offer and the Lord who died for him. (**Hebrews 2:1-4**)
8. God is Love, but when love is spurned, that person has chosen darkness rather than light. They are therefore judged on the basis of their works as they have rejected the Lord's work for them. (**John 3:16-21, Revelation 20:11-15**)
9. The first stop for the unbeliever after death is Torments in Hades or Sheol. This is a place of regret, torment and anguish. It is also called the bottomless pit. (**Revelation 9:2**)
10. Their ultimate state is the Lake of Fire after they have been judicially sentenced to it by the Lord Jesus Christ at the Last Judgement where they are judged according to their works. (**Revelation 14:11, 20:11-15, Matthew 8:12, 25:41, Mark 9:44, Jude 13**)

HARMONISATION

There are no apparent problems with a direct harmonisation of these accounts

HARMONY

THE DEPARTURE OF JUDAS

And as they sat and did eat, Jesus was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, One of you which eateth with me shall betray me, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me on the table. Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

And they began to be exceeding sorrowful, and began to say unto him one by one, Lord, Is it I? and another said, Is it I? And he answered and said unto them, It is one of the twelve, He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me. The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is as it was determined and written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had never been born.

Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. He then lying on Jesus' breast saith unto him, Lord, who is it? Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing. Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly. Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him. For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night.

FURTHER INSTRUCTION TO THE REMAINING DISCIPLES

Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him.

Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say to you. A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

44 THE LORD'S SUPPER**MATTHEW 26:26-30**

26 And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. 27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; 28 For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. 29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom. 30. And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

KEY WORDS

Eating	Esthio	Eat [Present Active Participle]
Took	Lambano	Take [Aorist Active Participle]
Bread	Artos	Bread
Blessed	Eulogeo	Blessed [Aorist Active Participle]
Brake	Klao	Break [Aorist Active Indicative]
Gave	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Participle]
Disciples	Mathetes	Disciple
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Take	Lambano	Take [Aorist Active Imperative]
Eat	Phago	Eat [Aorist Active Imperative]
Is	Eimi	Keeps on being [Present Active Indicative]
Body	Soma	Body
Took	Lambano	Take [Aorist Active Participle]
Cup	Poterion	Cup
Gave thanks	Eucharisteo	Give thanks [Aorist Active Participle]
Gave	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Indicative]
Saying	Lego	Say [Present Active Participle]
Drink	Pino	Drink [Aorist Active Imperative]
Ye All	Pas	All
Is	Eimi	Keeps on being [Present Active Indicative]
Blood	Aima	Blood
New	Kainos	New
Testament	Diatheke	Testament, Covenant
Shed	Ekcheo	Poured out, Shed, Spilt [Present Passive Participle]
Many	Polus	Many
For	Eis	For, As
Remission	Aphesis	Remission, Forgiveness
Sins	Hamartia	Sin
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Will not	Ou me	Not
Drink	Pino	Drink [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Henceforth	Apo Arti	From now
Fruit	Karpos	Fruit
Vine	Ampelos	Vine
Day	Hemera	Day
Drink	Pino	Drink [Present Active Subjunctive]
Father's	Pater	Father
Kingdom	Basileia	Kingdom
Had sung a hymn	Humneo	Sing a hymn [Aorist Active Participle]
Went out	Exerchomai	Go out [Aorist Active Indicative]
Mount	Oros	Mount

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED AT THE FIRST COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

ITEM	OLD TESTAMENT	DESCRIPTION	FULFILMENT
144	Genesis 14:18	The Last Supper foreshadowed	Matthew 26:26-29
	Leviticus 17:11	The Blood – the life of the flesh	Matthew 26:28
	Jeremiah 31:31	The Messiah would be the new covenant	Matthew 26:28

REFLECTION

Verse 26. And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. **27.** And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; **28.** For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. **29.** But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom. **30.** And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

Judas is now departed. Jesus now takes the bread and blessed it. The blessing starts a new meal. Jesus would have given thanks at the beginning, middle and end of the meal, as was the custom of the day.

Here half way through the meal, He is again giving thanks. This is the new meal, a new meal for a new dispensation. The Last "Passover like" meal is finished, and we now see the first Lord's Supper or Eucharist. He breaks the bread, which represents the body of the Jesus Christ being nailed onto the cruel Cross.

He instructs the disciples to take it and eat it. Both of these instructions are in the aorist active imperative, the imperative mood showing that to take and eat were both commandments. The aorist tense gives a point of time, when you take and then eat of the bread.

The bread and wine goes into the mouth and becomes part of you. You are what you eat. What is being said here is that you have personally believed in Jesus Christ as Saviour. Communion is saying, "I have put my trust in Him and as a child of God I recognise what He has done for me".

Then He took the cup, this is possibly the third of four cups and is the "Cup of Redemption", and relates to **Psalm 116:13**, "*I will take the cup of salvation, and call upon the name of the LORD*". This Psalm is Hezekiah's prayer after having been put under the sin unto death and his recovery.

The **four cups at a Passover Feast** were

1. The cup of thanksgiving [**Luke 22:17-18**]
2. The cup of plagues [not mentioned],
3. The cup of redemption [mentioned here],
4. The cup of praise/blessing, which ended the Passover.

The cup of redemption relates to salvation. The sins of the world are placed in the cup and the Lord Jesus Christ who knew no sin was made sin for us so that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him. We drink the equivalent of the third cup, the cup of redemption.

The cup is the "Auld Lang Syne" of the Christian life. We remember what God did for us through Christ.

The word to give thanks is, Eucharisteo, from which we get the word Eucharist. He gave it to them. He again commanded them to drink it in the aorist active Imperative but then said this is My blood of the New Testament which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

The word "is" in the phrase is eimi, which means keeps on being. It is in the present tense which means that the ritual will keep on being meaningful. It says that every time the cup is taken the wine keeps on representing the blood of Christ. The Lord is therefore saying that the Lord's Supper is to be perpetuated as a memorial.

The New Testament means a new covenant. Originally it meant two people placing an agreement or contract in a safe place. By the time of our Lord however it meaning had changed to make it the will or testament of a person to others.

This therefore is the will of the Lord Jesus Christ to the human race. It is deposited in heaven and anyone who believes in Him will have everlasting life.

Jesus now says that He will not drink of this fruit of the vine until the day when He drinks it new with us all in the Father's kingdom. This shows that there will be a Feast in the Millennium, at which Christ will drink the fruit of the vine with His eleven disciples. **Zechariah 14:16** indicates that the Feast of the Millennial Kingdom may be the Feast of Tabernacles, rather than Passover. In effect Passover is completed and done, but the Lord will "tabernacle" with his people, and then He will feast with them again.

The singing of the hymn was associated with the fourth cup and went out to the Mount of Olives the cup of praise. The hymn sung at the time of the fourth cup was **Psalms 113-118**.

MARK 14:22-25

22 And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat: this is my body. 23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: and they all drank of it. 24 And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many. 25 Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

KEY WORDS

Eat	Esthio	Eat [Present Active Participle]
Took	Lambano	Take [Aorist Active Participle]
Bread	Artos	Bread
Blessed	Eulogeo	Blessed [Aorist Active Participle]
Brake	Klao	Break [Aorist Active Indicative]
Gave	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Indicative]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Take	Lambano	Take [Aorist Active Imperative]
Eat	Phago	Eat [Aorist Active Imperative]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Is	Eimi	Keeps on being [Present Active Indicative]
Body	Soma	Body
Took	Lambano	Take [Aorist Active Participle]
Cup	Poterion	Cup
Given thanks	Eucharisteo	Give thanks [Aorist Active Participle]
Gave	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Indicative]
They all	Pas	All
Drank	Pino	Drink [Aorist Active Indicative]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Is	Eimi	Keeps on being [Present Active Indicative]
Blood	Aima	Blood
New	Kainos	New
Testament	Diatheke	Testament, Covenant
Shed	Ekcheo	Poured out, Shed, Spilt [Present Passive Participle]
Many	Polus	Many
Verily	Amen	Truly
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Will not	Ou me	Not
Drink	Pino	Drink [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
More	Ouketi	More, Henceforth
Fruit	Karpos	Fruit
Vine	Ampelos	Vine
Day	Hemera	Day
Drink	Pino	Drink [Present Active Subjunctive]
Kingdom	Basileia	Kingdom
God	Theos	God

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 22. And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat: this is my body. **23.** And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: and they all drank of it. **24.** And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many. **25.** Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

The head of the household used to give thanks for the bread and wine at any and every meal. Jewish people broke rather than cut their bread.

The statement, "This is my body", we should understand is not literal, the bread is a symbol of his body.

As a parallel example we would not for instance take literally the standard Jewish statement spoken of the Passover bread, "This is the bread of affliction our ancestors ate when they came from Egypt", for to take that literally would mean that this bread would have been centuries old. In addition it had already been eaten.

Four cups of red wine came to be used in the Passover meal. This cup was the third, which followed the blessing of the bread. Each person did not have an individual cup; they customarily passed around a common one.

Covenants were often ratified by the blood of sacrifice. God had redeemed his people from Egypt bought the blood of the Passover lamb. The phrase, "Which was shed for many", could refer to Isaiah 53.

Even though this meal is the day before the real Passover it is running a parallel line to the real Passover, which none of the disciples will eat this year.

Passover ritual interpreted the cup, but did not interpret it as blood, because Jewish law and custom were revolted by the idea of drinking any creature's blood especially human blood.

Vows of abstinence were common in Palestinian Judaism. Phrases such as, "I will not eat any such and such until this happens", or, "I vow that I will not use this until that happens".

Jewish blessings over the wine celebrated the fruit of the vine. Jesus says that he will not drink wine until the Kingdom of God comes, and he perhaps abstains from the fourth cup.

The Jewish people always portrayed the time of the kingdom as a banquet when the Bible had promised an unending supply of wine **Amos 9:13-15** – *"Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that the ploughman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him that soweth seed; and the mountains shall drop sweet wine, and all the hills shall melt. 14 And I will bring again the captivity of my people of Israel, and they shall build the waste cities, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and drink the wine thereof; they shall also make gardens, and eat the fruit of them. 15 And I will plant them upon their land, and they shall no more be pulled up out of their land which I have given them, saith the LORD thy God."*

LUKE 22:19-20

19 And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me. **20** Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

KEY WORDS

Took	Lambano	Take [Aorist Active Participle]
Bread	Artos	Bread
Gave thanks	Eucharisteo	Give thanks [Aorist Active Participle]
Brake	Klao	Break [Aorist Active Indicative]
Gave	Didomi	Give [Aorist Active Indicative]
Saying	Lego	Say
Is	Eimi	Keeps on being [Present Active Indicative]
Body	Soma	Body
Given	Didomi	Give [Present Passive Participle]
Do	Poieo	Do [Present Active Imperative]
Remembrance	Anamnesis	Remembrance
Likewise	Hosautos	In like manner
Cup	Poterion	Cup
Supper	Deipueo	Supper [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Saying	Lego	Say [Present Active Participle]
Is	Eimi	Keeps on being [Present Active Indicative]
New	Kainos	New
Testament	Diatheke	Testament, Covenant
Blood	Aima	Blood
Is Shed	Ekcheo	Poured out, Shed, Spilt [Present Passive Participle]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 19. And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me. **20.** Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

The bread and the wine were common not only at Passover meals, but also at every meal in that culture at the time of Christ. Those elements symbolised his "body" the sacrifice for the entire nation and his "blood". He was the sacrificial lamb who was to take away the sin of Israel and all the entire world. **John 1:29.**

The new covenant spoken of many times in the Old Testament but highlighted in **Jeremiah 31:31-34.** *"Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: 32. Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: 33. But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. 34. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more."*

The New Covenant was a prerequisite for the kingdom age. This was instituted by Jesus' sacrifice as seen in verse twenty. The new covenant provided for the regeneration of the nation of Israel and the Holy Spirit's indwelling individuals in the nation.

The Lord's Supper, as the Church celebrated it, consisted in the beginning of a very simple meal called the breaking of bread. **Acts 2:46.** Initially it appears to have been observed daily or whenever a few Christians came together probably at the close of every ordinary evening meal. Over a short space of time it became more formal and occurred each Sunday evening after the shared "love feast" – shared meal, and before the message. **1 Corinthians 11:23-26.**

In the celebration of remembrance the bread remained bread and the fruit of the vine was unchanged in character but the representative characters of both remained.

When Jesus said, “this is my body”, and, “this is my blood”, he was sitting in the middle of his followers and his blood was still flowing in his veins and his body was obviously among them.

APPLICATION

All members of the human race can take food, eat, and drink. The offer is therefore opened to all. The action of taking indicates acceptance of the bread of life in the form of Christ, which shows that the Christian life right from salvation is based on faith.

All people are able to take the bread and cup but only the believer, specifically in fellowship is able to spiritually discern the meaning of the bread and cup. **1 Corinthians 11:23-31**.

Believers in the Church Age also participate in the spiritual blessings of regeneration and the indwelling spirit.

That the bread and wine are symbols of our Lord's body and blood are clearly shown by the fact that the Lord had not died at the time he instituted the Lord's Table.

In the celebration of the Lord's Supper we are to be occupied with Christ himself, with the memories of His love and grace, recording His sorrows sufferings and death and bearing in mind His promise to come again and receive us unto Himself. It is a mistake to think of this ordinance as a means of grace in the sense of having to do with the salvation of the soul. It is intended to deepen in the heart of those already saved the realisation of the preciousness of Christ.

The Lord's Supper is a feast of remembrance which is intended to carry our minds back to the death of our Saviour and also to cause us to look forward to His coming again. We are to do this in remembrance of Him until His return for His church.

DOCTRINES

KINGDOM see page 41

CHRIST: ISAIAH CHAPTER 53: SUFFERING OF JESUS CHRIST

Isaiah 53 is one of the most famous chapters in the Bible and portrays prophetically the sufferings of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Prophecy - 53:1 “Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed?”

Fulfilment - **John 12:38**

Prophecy - 53:2 “For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him.”

Fulfilment - **Philippians 2:5-8**

Prophecy - 53:3 “He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not”

Fulfilment - **John 1:11, Matthew 26:38; 27:20-22,**

Prophecy - 53:4 “Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.”

Fulfilment - **Matthew 8:16, 27:41-43**

Prophecy - 53:5 “But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.”

Fulfilment - **Matthew 27:26-29, Colossians 1:20, 1 Peter 2:24**

Prophecy - 53:6 "All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all."

Fulfilment - **Romans 3:23, 2 Corinthians 5:21.**

Prophecy - 53:7 "He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth." –

Fulfilment - **Matthew 27:12-14, 1 Peter 2:23.**

Prophecy - 53:8 "He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken."

Fulfilment - **Luke 23:4-33, John 18:3-30**

Prophecy - 53:9 "And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth."

Fulfilment - **Matthew 27:24, 57-60**

Prophecy - 53:10 "Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand."

Fulfilment - **John 3:16, Romans 8:32**

Prophecy - 53:11 "He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities.:"

Fulfilment - **John 19:34, Romans 4:25**

Prophecy - 53:12 "Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors."

Fulfilment - **Mark 15:27, Luke 23:34, John 19:28-31**

CHURCH: COMMUNION: THE LORD'S SUPPER

1. There are three suppers which man is invited to:-

- a) The gospel supper (**Luke 14:15-24**)
- b) Marriage supper of the Lamb (**Revelation. 19:7-9**)
- c) Lord's supper (**1 Corinthians. 11:23-29**)

2. Those who accept the gospel supper will eventually appear at the wedding supper and in the meantime, whilst on earth, should partake of the Lord's Supper.

3. At the Lord's Supper the believer meditates on:-

- a) The death of Jesus Christ as his personal Saviour.
- b) The risen Lord who makes intercession for him.
- c) The coming Lord who will return for His church and set up His reign on the earth.

4. The Lord's Supper is derived from the Passover meal (**Exodus. 12:1-11, 1 Corinthians. 11:23-32**). Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us (**1 Corinthians. 5:7**)

5. The bread represents the body of Christ which was broken for us when He bore our sins on the cross (**1 Corinthians 11:24**)

The wine represents the blood of Christ which is the guarantee of our salvation. For without the shedding of blood there is no remission of sin. (**1 Corinthians. 11:25**)

6. The Lord's Table is prepared for believers in the presence of their enemies (**Psalm 23:5**)
7. The believer must be in fellowship to discern the meaning of the Lord's Supper (**1 Corinthians 11:29**). This is accomplished by self judgement (**1 Corinthians 11:31, 1 John 1:9**)
8. Partaking of the Lord's Supper without fellowship with the Lord can result in sickness or death. (**1 Corinthians 11:30**)

COVENANT – NEW COVENANT

1. The New Covenant guarantees eternal blessing under the Abrahamic Covenant (**Jeremiah 31:31-37, Hebrews 8:7-9**).
2. It is unconditional - God will fulfil it. "I will" (Hebrews 8:10,12) rather than "If ye will" (**Exodus 19:5**).
3. The New Covenant is said to be better than the Mosaic Covenant. (**Hebrews 7:19; Romans 8:3,4**).
4. Obedience is from a willing heart (Hebrews 8:10) whilst that for the Mosaic Law was fear (**Hebrews 2:2; 12:25-27**).
5. In the New Covenant all shall know God, from the least to the greatest (**Hebrews 8:11**).
6. The sins are forgotten under the New Covenant (**Hebrews 8:12**).
7. The New Covenant relies on the completed sacrifice of Jesus Christ (**Hebrews 9:11-12**).

BLOOD SACRIFICE

1. Ever since the earliest recorded time God has required a blood sacrifice for sin. It is implied by the coats of skin provided by the Lord in the garden after Adam and Eve had attempted to clothe their nakedness with leaves. Abel brought an acceptable animal sacrifice, unlike Cain's who brought an unacceptable bloodless offering.
2. The requirement for blood sacrifices was continued with Noah after the flood; (cf. the near sacrifice of Isaac by Abraham); and was established as a requirement not only by the Passover lamb but also in the Levitical offerings.
3. When recording the will of God for Israel in the matter of food and the abstinence from eating "any manner of blood" Moses states, "For the life of the flesh is in the blood; and I have given it to you upon the altar to make atonement for your souls: for it is the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul".
4. It is clear from the above that the life of an innocent victim (the animal sacrifice) acted as a shadow until the once and for all payment was paid with the true sacrifice of Christ.
5. There is an absolute necessity of the unique sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ as indicated by the phrase "the blood of Christ". (**Romans 3:25, Ephesians 1:7, Hebrews 9:22**)
6. Up to the time of the once and for all sacrifice the sins of believers were set aside adjacent to them (gk. para) but since the cross they have been taken fully away.
7. The twelve elements of grace which involve the blood of Christ:-
 - a) The New Covenant. (**Hebrews 8:8, 9:20-21**)
 - b) The blood is the life. (**John 6:53**)
 - c) Purchase and Redemption. (**Acts 20:28, Ephesians 1:7, 1 Peter 1:18-19**)
 - d) Propitiation. (**Romans 3:25**)

- e) Justification. (**Romans 5:9**)
- f) Sanctification. (**Hebrews 13:12**)
- g) Cleansing. (**Hebrews 9:14, 1 John 1:7, Revelation 7:14**)
- h) Victory. (**Revelation 12:11**)
- i) The blood of sprinkling. (**Hebrews 10:22, 1 Peter 1:2**)
- j) Made nigh. (**Ephesians 2:13**)
- k) Peace. (**Colossians 1:20**)
- l) Boldness to enter. (**Hebrews 10:19**)

8. It is of interest that the resurrection body consists of flesh and bone but apparently no blood.

HARMONISATION

There are no apparent problems with a direct harmonisation of these accounts

HARMONY

THE LORD'S SUPPER

And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body which is given for you, this do in remembrance of me. And he took the cup after supper, and when he had given thanks he gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; for this cup the new testament in my blood which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

Verily I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom. And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the Mount of Olives.

145 PREDICTION OF PETER'S FALL

This section deals with the prediction of the fall/failure/denials of Peter, in relation to his denying the Lord and the crowing of a cock in Jerusalem. There is an apparent problem between the four Gospel accounts of this period of time and the number of times the cock crowed, but as we will see the difficulty disappears with focused study.

APPARENT PROBLEM BETWEEN MARK'S ACCOUNT AND THE OTHER GOSPELS

DENIAL OF PETER AND THE CROWING OF THE COCK

The crowing of the cock is reported in all four Gospels, with Mark reporting that the cock crowed twice.

Study of the four Gospels show that during this night Peter is reported as having denied the Lord on as many as six occasions, rather than three, so he has a very busy night denying the Lord.

The sequence appears as follows:-

FIRST DENIAL

PETER AT THE FIRE - A YOUNG SERVANT GIRL

This is reported in three Gospels:

MATTHEW 26:69 *“Now Peter sat without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee. 70 But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.”*

MARK 14:66 *“And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh one of the maids of the high priest: And when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and said, And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth. 68 But he denied, saying, I know not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch; and the cock crew.”*

LUKE 22:55 *“And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them. 56 But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him. 57 And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.”*

Comments - Notice Mark reports the first crowing of the cock here, but it is after Peter has gone out into the porch which allows additional time for other denials that he himself does not note.

SECOND DENIAL

A MAN CHALLENGES HIM

LUKE 22:58 *“And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.”*

Comments - Here a man challenges him in sequence in Luke but no mention of the cock crowing.

THIRD DENIAL

SERVANT OF THE HIGH PRIEST

JOHN 18:26 *“One of the servants of the high priest, being his kinsman whose ear Peter cut off, saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him? 27 Peter then denied again: and immediately the cock crew.”*

Comments - The third denial was a friend of the man injured in the incident at the arrest of our Lord. Here we note that immediately the cock crowed. This conforms with the statement in **John 13:38**, *“Jesus answered him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.”*

FOURTH DENIAL

ANOTHER SERVANT GIRL

MATTHEW 26:71 *“And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that were there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth. 72 And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.”*

MARK 14:69 *“And a maid saw him again, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them. 70 And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by said again to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilaean, and thy speech agreeth thereto. 71 But he began to curse and to swear, saying, I know not this man of whom ye speak.”*

Comments - Here Peter is in the porch again denying the Lord.

FIFTH DENIAL

THE CROWD

MATTHEW 26:73 “And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them; for thy speech betrayeth thee. 74 Then began he to curse and to swear, saying, I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew. 75 And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.”

Comments - Here we notice that immediately the cock crew. This is the second crowing of the cock.

SIXTH DENIAL

ANOTHER MAN

LUKE 22:59 “And about the space of one hour after another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellow also was with him: for he is a Galilaean.60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately, while he yet spake, the cock crew.”

Comments - Here we have the cock crowing while he was yet speaking so denials 5 and 6 are closely sequential and is the second crowing of the cock.

SECOND CROWING OF THE COCK

MARK 14:72. “And the second time the cock crew. And Peter called to mind the word that Jesus said unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he wept.”

Comments - Remembering that Mark is Peter’s account in collaboration with Mark the second crowing marked the time of great remorse and weeping as he had twice denied the Lord three times terminating with crows from the cock.

It is therefore considered that there is no anomaly in this account.

MATTHEW 26:31-35

Matthew 26:31 Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for **it is written**, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. **32** But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee. **33** Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended. **34** Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. **35** Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.

KEY WORDS

Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
All	Pas	All
Shall be offended	Skandalizo	Scandalise, Be offended [Future Passive Indicative]
Night	Nux	Night
It is written	Grapho	Written [Perfect Passive Indicative]
Will smite	Patasso	Strike, Smite [Future Active Indicative]
Shepherd	Poimen	Shepherd
Sheep	Probaton	Sheep
Flock	Poimne	Flock, Fold
Be Scattered Abroad	Diaskorpizo	Scattered, Dispersed [Future Passive Indicative]
After I	Eme	I
Risen again	Egeiro	Rise again [Aorist Passive Infinitive]
Will go	Proago	Go before [Future Active Indicative]
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Aorist Passive Participle]
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]

Though	Ei Kai	If even
All men	Pas	All
Shall be offended	Skandalizo	Scandalise, Be offended [Future Passive Indicative]
Will I	Ego	I
Never	Oudeis	Never
Be offended	Skandalizo	Scandalise, Be offended [Future Passive Indicative]
Said	Phemi	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Verily	Amen	Truly
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Cock	Alektor	Cock
Crow	Phoneo	Crow [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Shalt deny	Aparneomai	Deny, Disown [Future Middle Indicative]
Thrice	Tris	Thrice
Said	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Though	Kan	Though
I should	Dei	Should, Ought [Present Active Subjunctive]
Die	Apothnesko	Die [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Will I not	Ou me	Never
Deny	Aparneomai	Deny, Disown [Future Middle Indicative]
Likewise	Homoios	Likewise
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
All	Pas	All
Disciples	Mathetes	Disciple

PERFECT TENSE VERB

GRAPHO – WRITE, WRITTEN – Occurs 192 times in the New Testament with 96 times in the Perfect Tense so that, with the exception of Oida [to knows], Grapho is the most common verb appearing in the Perfect Tense in the New Testament. It appears in 11 individual books and is intimately involved with Bible prophecy.

The frequency shows the utmost importance that God places on His unchangeable Word. We note that the Lord Jesus Christ directly quotes the Prophecies in over a third of occurrence of the Grapho Perfect Tense showing the unbreakable link between God and His Word.

As prophecies comprise 27% of all verses in the Bible God expects us to use them, those which have been perfectly fulfilled as encouragement and those yet to be fulfilled for our instruction and guidance especially as we see the opportunity for them all to be literally fulfilled.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 31. Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. **32.** But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.

Jesus begins this passage by giving them a prophecy from **Zechariah 13:7**. *“Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith the LORD of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones.”*

It should be noted that this is a prophecy regarding the action of the disciples at the time of the Cross. In the Zechariah passage it refers to “my shepherd”, God’s shepherd, and we know that Jesus is the shepherd, and we are the sheep. The Shepherd is indeed smitten and the sheep are scattered during the time of the Cross.

He not only tells them that He is going to rise from the dead but that He will precede them into Galilee so that even after the resurrection the disciples are dragging their feet.

Verse 33. Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended. **34.** Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before

the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. 35. Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.

Peter responds to this statement by saying that even though everybody else will be offended and deny the Lord yet he will not.

Peter here is ignoring then Word of God, which clearly states that the denials will come at this time. He ignores what Jesus has said, and the perfect tense reminds us, it is written = it is truth.

Peter has just sung a beautiful hymn, and he is enthusiastic. He admits that the rest of the disciples are likely to turn out to be a bunch of cowards, but not him. It is an emotional commitment and as such has no stability to it at all.

The Lord replies to this statement with a prophecy, which will be fulfilled within the next few hours that he will deny the Lord three times before the cock crows. In verse 34 He is speaking personally to Peter.

It is noted that the chicken, is considered an unclean animal at the time, forbidden by the Law and the Rabbinic traditions, together with other items such as pork and shrimp. Normally chicken would not be allowed in Jerusalem, but the presence of chicken/roosters is a reminder to the Jews that they are being occupied by the Romans at this time.

Peter has not accepted Zechariah's prophecy, now he does not accept a prophecy from our Lord. He is very sincere here and means what he says, but Peter is ignorant of the Plan of God and the Old Testament prophecies of a suffering Saviour.

We will see later how Peter continues to take matters into his own hands when he attacks the Temple guard when the Lord is arrested. He was sincere, but wrong. All the disciples followed Peter's lead and say that they will not forsake the Lord and will be willing to die with Him.

MARK 14:27-31

Mark 4:27 And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered. 28 But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee. 29 But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet will not I. 30 And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. 31 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

KEY WORDS

Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
All	Pas	All
Ye shall be offended	Skandalizo	Scandalise, Be offended [Future Passive Indicative]
Because	Nux	Night
Written	Grapho	Written [Perfect Passive Indicative]
Will smite	Patasso	Strike, Smite [Future Active Indicative]
Shepherd	Poimen	Shepherd
Sheep	Probaton	Sheep
Flock	Poimne	Flock, Fold
Shall be scattered	Diaskorpizo	Scattered, Dispersed [Future Passive Indicative]
After I	Eme	I
Risen	Egeiro	Rise again [Aorist Passive Infinitive]
Will go before	Proago	Go before [Future Active Indicative]
Said	Lego	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Although	Kai	Even
All	Pas	All
Shall be offended	Skandalizo	Scandalise, Be offended [Future Passive Indicative]
Yet	Alla	Yet
Will not I	Ou Ego	Not I
Saith	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Verily	Amen	Truly

Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
This day	Semeron	Today
Night	Nux	Night
Cock	Alektor	Cock
Crow	Phoneo	Crow [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Shalt deny	Aparneomai	Deny, Disown [Future Middle Indicative]
Thrice	Tris	Thrice
Spake	Lego	Say [Imperfect Active Indicative]
More	Mallon	Greater
Vehemently	Perissos	Vehemently, Excessively
Should	Dei	Ought, Should [Present Active Subjunctive]
Die with	Sunapothnesko	To die in the company with [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Will deny	Aparneomai	Deny, Disown [Future Middle Indicative]
Likewise	Hosautos	In the same way
Said	Lego	Say [Imperfect Active Indicative]

PERFECT TENSE VERB

GRAPHO – WRITE, WRITTEN – Occurs 192 times in the New Testament with 96 times in the Perfect Tense so that, with the exception of Oida [to knows], Grapho is the most common verb appearing in the Perfect Tense in the New Testament. It appears in 11 individual books and is intimately involved with Bible prophecy. The frequency shows the utmost importance that God places on His unchangeable Word. We note that the Lord Jesus Christ directly quotes the Prophecies in over a third of occurrence of the Grapho Perfect Tense showing the unbreakable link between God and His Word. As prophecies comprise 27% of all verses in the Bible God expects us to use them, those which have been perfectly fulfilled as encouragement and those yet to be fulfilled for our instruction and guidance especially as we see the opportunity for them all to be literally fulfilled.

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 27. And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered. 28. But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

Jesus predicted that all the disciples would take offence at His sufferings and death. Jesus quoted **Zechariah 13:7** to the situation. I [God the Father] will strike [put to death], the shepherd [Jesus], and the sheep [the disciples], will be scattered abroad.

However Jesus immediately countered His prediction of desertion by the disciples with the promise of a post resurrection reunion in Galilee. They were to follow the Risen Lord, who would continue to lead His people in their future tasks.

Verse 29. But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet will not I. 30. And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. 31. But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

Peter picks up the first part of the Lord's prediction, while ignoring the second part. He insists that the he would remain faithful even if the others fall away. Jesus however told Peter that his fall would be greater than the others, despite his sincerity. He tells Peter that before the cock crows twice Peter would not only desert Jesus but also would deny him three times.

The cock crow was a proverbial expression for early morning before sunrise as seen in **Mark 13:35**, "*Watch ye therefore: for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cockcrowing, or in the morning*".

Only Mark mentioned the rooster crowing twice, which was a detail probably indelibly marked in Peter's memory. The fact that the word twice is more likely is the use of the words the second time in a **Mark 14:72**.

LUKE 22:31-34

31. And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: 32. But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren. 33. And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death. 34. And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

KEY WORDS

Lord	Kurios	Lord, Master
Said	Epo	See
Behold	Idou	Behold, Lo
Satan	Satanas	Satan
Desired	Exaiteomai	Desire [Aorist Middle Indicative]
Have	-	Not found in the original
May sift	Siniazo	Riddle, Sift [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Wheat	Sitos	Grain, Wheat
Prayed	Deomai	Pray, Make request [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Faith	Pisitis	Faith
Fail	Ekleipo	Fail [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Art converted	Epistrepho	Turn around [Aorist Active Participle]
Strengthen	Sterizo	Strengthen [Aorist Active Imperative]
Brethren	Adelphos	Brother
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Am	Eimi	Keep on being [Present Active Indicative]
Ready	Hetoimos	Ready
Go	Poreuomai	Depart, Go [Present Middle Infinitive]
Prison	Phulake	Prison
Death	Thanatos	Death
Said	Epo	Say [Aorist Active Indicative]
Tell	Lego	Tell [Present Active Indicative]
Cock	Alektor	Cock
Shall crow	Phoneo	Crow, Sound [Future Active Indicative]
Day	Semeron	Today
Shalt deny	Aparneomai	Deny [Aorist Middle Subjunctive]
Thrice	Tris	Thrice
Knowest	Eido	Know [Perfect Active Infinitive]

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found

REFLECTION

Verse 31. And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: 32. But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren. 33. And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death. 34. And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

We now come to the last in a series of three examples of human faithlessness. The first was the treachery of Judas, the second was a selfish ambition of the disciples, and now we have the cowardice of Peter.

The repetition of “Simon Simon”, speaks of the love and tenderness of Christ for His unstable disciple. Satan had asked to have all the disciples, so that he might sift them as wheat. Jesus addresses Peter as representative of all. It is a reminder, that in ministry we are especially targeted by the enemy, and malice will often be felt around us, but the Lord’s arms are around and under us also! **Deuteronomy 33:27**.

In verse 32 the reference about being converted does not relate to salvation but relates to the turning around of Peter from his backslidden position and having recovered from his failure becoming the leader of the Disciples, and he eventually does strengthen the brethren.

In verse 33 Peter expresses willingness to accompany Jesus to prison and even death. But he is told that before morning light has fully dawned he would deny three times that he even knew the Lord.

While Peter expresses his willingness with enthusiasm Jesus recognises that Peter is going to fail and says that he will betray Him three times.

It is of interest that the gospels record six different denials by Peter including two young women [**Matthew 26:69-70, 26:71**], a crowd **Matthew 26:73-74**, two men **Luke 22:58, Luke 22:59** and a servant of the high priest. [**John 18:26, 27**.]

Peter appears to have been very busy denying the Lord on many occasions that night, but he will be genuinely repentant, and will confess his sin to the Lord and be restored by the Lord personally.

JOHN 13:36-38

36. Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards. 37. Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake. 38. Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

KEY WORDS

Said	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Lord	Kurios	Lord, Master
Whither	Pou	Where
Goest	Hupago	Go [Present Active Indicative]
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Aorist Passive Indicative]
Go	Hupago	Go [Present Active Indicative]
Canst not	Dunamai	Power [Present Middle Indicative]
Follow	Akoloutheo	Follow [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Shalt follow	Akoloutheo	Follow [Future Active Indicative]
Afterwards	Husteron	Afterwards
Said	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Cannot	Dunamai	Power [Present Middle Indicative]
Follow	Akoloutheo	Follow [Aorist Active Infinitive]
Lay down	Tithemi	Lay down [Future Active Indicative]
Life	Psuche	Soul
Sake	Huper Sou	For your sake
Answered	Apokrinomai	Answer [Present Middle Indicative]
Wilt thou lay down	Tithemi	Lay down [Future Active Indicative]
Verily	Amen	Truly
Say	Lego	Say [Present Active Indicative]
Cock	Alektor	Cock
Crow	Phoneo	Crow, Sound [Aorist Active Subjunctive]
Till	Heos	Until
Denied	Aparneomai	Deny [Future Middle Indicative]
Thrice	Tris	Thrice

PERFECT TENSE VERBS – None found

OLD TESTAMENT PROPHECY FULFILLED IN THE GOSPELS AT THE FIRST ADVENT - None found**REFLECTION**

Verse 36. Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards. **37.** Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake. **38.** Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

Peter was a hard man physically, but over-estimated his strength, and so spiritually he was not as strong as he thought he was at this point. Many people think that strength is something to do with physique, but it is spiritual fibre, built up by the habit of walking in the filling of the Holy Spirit, which makes people strong. There must be a mental attitude behind the physique. Peter learned the lessons he needed to learn, and he served the Lord unto death.

Peter was eventually crucified upside down, because he did not feel worthy to be crucified the right way up as his Lord was. The next day to these words Peter is going to be tested and he is going to fail. He fails because he tries to do it in his own strength. In that strength he could pull in a heavy net but not resist what Satan had brought against him.

APPLICATION

If you start doing something important in your spiritual life, you will have plenty of testing. The enemy does not applaud us, he hates us, but the Lord is our Master and He is in charge of any testing time.

You may have got away with being sloppy in the Christian life prior to dedicating yourself to the Lord but once you start to work for the Lord the testing will come and you must walk with the Holy Spirit or you will fall over just as fast as Peter is going to.

God is going to do things with our life, so get the message now and walk in the filling of the Holy Spirit!

If you get working for God you will be blessed but the enemy will not be sitting around cheering you on from the sidelines.

Do not be like Peter is going to be over this next day, do not think you know a lot, that you have great assets and can work alone. Learn as a child in the Spirit and therefore have the mental attitude that the Lord can teach you, and that you will only walk if the spirit guides you. Only then are you safe.

PROPHECY**ABANDONED BY THE DISCIPLES****PROPHECY**

Zechariah 13:7 (487 BC): Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith the LORD of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones.

1. Although the disciples had been taught by the Lord himself for three years, they had not accepted the concept that the Lord Jesus Christ had to go to the cross.
2. This is clearly shown by Peter telling the Lord that this should not be so, and earning the rebuke of "Get thee behind me Satan" from the Lord (**Matthew 16:21-23**).
3. As a consequence, when the shepherd was struck the sheep scattered.

FULFILMENT

Mark 14:27 (32 AD): And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

Peter denied that he would be offended by his association with the Lord. He eventually denied the Lord three times before the cock crowed twice (**Luke 22:54-62**).

DOCTRINES

PETER - DIVINE GUIDANCE

1. SCRIPTURE - Gospels, Acts, First and Second Peter.

2. BIOGRAPHY

Born Simon the son of Jonas, he was a native of Bethsaida in Galilee. He was married and lived with his mother-in-law at Capernaum at the time he was called by the Lord. He was a fisherman, fishing with his father and his brother Andrew when Jesus found him. Together with James and John, Peter formed a group of three disciples who appeared to have a closer relationship with Jesus, as they appeared with Him at the Mount of Transfiguration (**Matthew 17:1-13**), and in the garden of Gethsemane (**Matthew 26:36-46**). Peter was the leader of the disciples and often spoke without fully considering the situation. It was Peter who walked on the sea at Galilee (**Matthew 14:22-32**) before his faith collapsed. He also was the one who was commended by Jesus for recognising Jesus as the Messiah. Peter was disappointed that Jesus was not going to set up a temporal kingdom as the final act of His ministry (**Mark 8:32, 33**). Saying that he would die rather than desert Jesus, he failed miserably later that day and denied Him three times. After Pentecost, Peter was a changed man, preaching boldly about Jesus Christ (**Acts 2:14-40**). He had, however, to learn that the Gentiles were also subject to the promise of Abraham and that the Mosaic law had been fulfilled at the cross (**Matthew 5:17; Acts 11:6-9**). Herod imprisoned him but he was released by an angel. Paul admonished Peter regarding his superficial relationship with the Gentiles but Peter eventually commended Paul's writings for the mature believer (**2 Peter 3:15, 16**). Peter then disappears from the scripture but it is said that he was crucified upside down as a martyr.

3. EVALUATION: **Acts 11:1-16**.

- a) Peter is in Jerusalem for a meeting of church leaders (verse 1).
- b) News of the Gentile Pentecost was received (verse 1).
- c) Opposition is received from legalists (verse 2).
- d) This brought criticism of Peter (verse 3).
- e) Peter begins to think back on the Gentile Pentecost (verse 4), bringing out the factors which led Peter to go to Cornelius' house.
- f) Peter is given guidance through prayer (verse 5).
- g) He is given guidance through pondering the meaning of the animals he saw (verse 6).
- h) Peter is informed by God that there had been a change as far as eating of previously unclean animals was concerned (verses 7-10).
- i) He is guided by coincidence or providential circumstances by the arrival of three men from Caesarea (verse 11). God opened doors for Peter.
- j) The Holy Spirit confirms that he should go to Caesarea (verse 12).
- k) When he met Cornelius he compared experiences with him (verses 13-15).
- l) Peter is guided also by remembering Scripture (verse 16).

4. PRINCIPLES

- a) God's will for Peter depended on his being aware of:
 - i) Viewpoint will of God - what does He want me to think (**Mark 8:33**).
 - ii) Operational will of God - what does He want me to do (**Acts 10:20**).
 - iii) Geographical will of God - where does He want me to go (**John 21:18**).
- b) Peter's attitude and maturity also played a part:
 - i) His knowledge of the scriptures (**Psalms 32:8; Proverbs 3:1-6**).
 - ii) The filling of the Holy Spirit (**Romans 6:13; 12:1,2**).
 - iii) Maturity (**2 Peter 3:18**).
- c) God will not force His own will on the believer but desires to give guidance to His children (**Hebrews 3:7**).
- d) Guidance is given nowadays through the Bible (**1 Corinthians 13:10**).

- e) Many items of guidance are clearly set out in the Scriptures, e.g. do not marry an unbeliever (**2 Corinthians 6:14**).
- f) The correct following of guidance gives blessing to others as well as the one who is guided.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL SECURITY

1. When a person truly trusts Jesus Christ for salvation, he is saved forever. He cannot lose his salvation.
2. POSITIONAL APPROACH (**Romans 8:38-39**)
We are united with Christ ("in Christ"). Absolutely nothing can separate us from the love of God which is in Christ.
3. LOGICAL APPROACH (**Romans 8:32, Romans 5**)
As unbelievers we are enemies of God (Romans 5), as believers we are his children. If he did the most for his enemies what will he do for his children? This excludes loss of salvation for he saved us while we were his enemies.
4. GOD'S HANDS APPROACH (**John 10:28, Psalm 37:24**)
Neither shall anyone seize them out of my hand. God is all powerful.
5. EXPERIENTIAL APPROACH (**2 Timothy 2:12-13**)
If we deny Christ He is going to deny us rewards (context=suffering and rewards). If we renounce Him, HE REMAINS FAITHFUL. The believer is in Christ and Christ indwells the believer. He cannot deny Himself.
6. THE FAMILY APPROACH (**Galatians 3:26, John 1:12**)
When you believe in Christ you are born again as a child of God. You cannot be unborn, once a child always a child.
7. THE INHERITANCE APPROACH (**1 Peter 1:4-5**)
We have an inheritance incorruptible, undefiled which fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for us who are kept by the power of God. Perfect tense - it will always be reserved, since it is kept by God, not us.
8. THE SOVEREIGNTY APPROACH (**2 Peter 3:9, Jude 24**)
He is not willing that any should perish - refers to the whole human race (2 Peter 3:9) Now unto him who is able to keep you from falling (from perishing). Once you are saved, it is His will that you don't perish.
9. THE BODY APPROACH (**1 Corinthians 12:21, Colossians 1:18**)
Christ is the head, we are the members of the body. If any are lost, the body of Christ is incomplete.
10. THE GREEK TENSE APPROACH (**Ephesians 2:8-9**)
"For by Grace are ye saved". Perfect tense of the verb "sozo". For by Grace have you been saved in the past so that you go on being saved forever.
11. THE SEALING MINISTRY OF THE HOLY SPIRIT APPROACH (**2 Corinthians 1:22, Ephesians 1:13, 4:30**)
In the ancient world the seal was a guarantee for protection. The indwelling of the Holy Spirit guarantees our security.

CHRISTIAN LIFE: SUFFERING

1. Ultimately, all suffering is a result of the sin of Adam.
2. God is sovereign and allows even undeserved suffering to come upon the world for a reason (**Romans 8:28**)
 - a) To bring people to a point of helplessness where they call out to Him
 - b) To test and develop faith, so bringing glory to Himself.
3. There will be no suffering for believers in eternity (**Revelation 21:4**).

4. Unbelievers will suffer forever in the Lake of Fire (**Revelation 20:12-15**).

5. Suffering can be caused by:

- a) Discipline for your own sins
- b) The effect of the sins of others on you - gossip, war, crime
- c) Self-induced suffering as a result of your own actions – e.g. sickness from smoking, poverty from poor stewardship
- d) The sovereign will of God - health, weather.

6. Premise of Suffering:

- a) All suffering is designed for blessing in the Christian walk (**1 Peter 1:7, 8, 4:14**)
- b) Even discipline is designed to restore fellowship (**Hebrews 12:6**)
- c) Suffering follows the principle of grace (**Romans 8:28, 1 Thessalonians 5:18**).

7. Purpose of Christian Suffering:

- a) To receive discipline for carnality or backsliding (**Psalm 38**)
- b) To glorify God (**Job 1:8-12, Luke 15:20, 21**)
- c) To illustrate doctrine (Book of Hosea)
- d) To learn obedience (**Philippians 2:8, Hebrews 5:8**)
- e) To keep down pride (**2 Corinthians 12:7-10**)
- f) To develop faith (**1 Peter 1:7, 8**)
- g) To witness for Christ (**2 Corinthians 13:4**)
- h) To demonstrate the power of God (**2 Corinthians 11:24-33, 2 Corinthians 12:7-10**)
- i) To manifest the fruit of the Spirit (**2 Corinthians 4:8-11**)
- j) To help others who suffer (**2 Corinthians 1:3-5**)
- k) From indirect action - because other believers get out of fellowship (**Romans 14, 1 Corinthians 12:12, 13, 26, 1 Samuel 21, 1 Chronicles 21**).

8. Dealing With Suffering - Applying Spiritual Daily Orders:

To be a believer is to be associated with suffering. It is not a strange thing, it is our duty, and we are to take it as a soldier takes the rigours of a long campaign; without complaint, and with dignity and strength.

The five "Daily Orders" for the battle against the adversary, to be applied in the church age, in the power of the Holy Spirit are found in **1 Peter 5:8,9**. They will protect us against the cunning of the "lion".

- a) Be Sober! - At all times be self controlled, not under the control of any emotion, or any other substance(drink or drugs), but only by the Holy Spirit. **Romans 13:11-13, 1 Thessalonians 5:6 -8**.
- b) Be Vigilant! - At all times, stay awake to danger, don't relax your guard, don't get careless.
- c) Resist! - Stand up to, resist, oppose everything he stands for. Zero tolerance of evil is to be the standard for our lives. Also refer, **Luke 4:3-12, Ephesians 4:27, 6:11-13, James 4:7**.
- d) Be steadfast in the faith once delivered to the apostles! Be unbreakable, stand as a solid mass of soldiers resisting attack. Stand with the apostolic doctrines, and their practices. As a local church be united, stand together, tight and committed to each other.
- e) Keep on knowing you are not alone! All believers suffer pressures when they stand for their Lord.

WORRY

1. General scripture for the cure to worry (**Genesis 15**).

2. Scriptures where the believer is told not to worry: (**Philippians 4:6; Psalm 55:22; 1 Peter 5:7; 1 Samuel 17:47; Exodus 14:13, 14**).

3. We are instructed to be imitators of God - God never worries (Ephesians 5:1) When we worry we do not imitate God.

4. Three categories of worry:

- a) Worry about problems of this life.
- b) Worry about death and dying.
- c) Worry about sin (guilt).

5. The example given is of Abram in **Genesis 15**.

6. First cure for worry - The Promises of God (v 1-7).

- a) God tells Abram not to worry (v 1) -
- b) "I am thy shield and thy exceeding reward.
- c) The promise of a natural child is given (v 4).
- d) The promises of God are backed by the perfect character of God
- e) God provides an object lesson - the stars (v 5).
- f) God reminds him of his salvation - a grace gift (v 6).
- g) God reminds Abram of God's faithfulness in the past (v 7).
- h) The challenge to Abram: trust in God or worry.

7. Second cure for worry - The Doctrine of the Word (v 8-12).

a) God instructs Abram to sacrifice five animals (v 9)

b) Animals sacrificed are:

- i) HEIFER - representing CONFESSION OF SINS
- ii) SHE GOAT representing SALVATION RECONCILIATION
- iii) RAM representing SALVATION PROPITIATION
- iv) TURTLE DOVE representing CHRIST'S DEITY
- v) PIGEON representing CHRIST'S RESURRECTED HUMANITY.

c) Application to the cure of worry:

i) HEIFER - by confessing your sins they are blotted out. Do not worry about past failures. Confession of sins is essential before you can apply the doctrines of the Bible to cure your worry.

ii) SHE GOAT - God provided reconciliation through Christ by removing the barrier between God and man - we are reconciled therefore do not worry.

iii) RAM - God was satisfied by Christ's sacrifice. Jesus Christ can handle our problems in time do not worry.

iv) TURTLE DOVE - Jesus Christ as God is always faithful, He is always with us - do not worry.

v) PIGEON - The resurrected Jesus Christ is seated in the place of commendation at the right hand of God in a most powerful location - do not worry.

d) Satan counter-attacks in the form of birds swooping down on the carcasses, doubts form and there is a temptation to worry (v 11).

e) Abram drives them away - he refuses to worry (v 11)

f) Under pressure, Abram begins to doubt and worry about his descendants (v 12).

8. Third cure for worry - Knowledge of prophecy

a) In our future as believers we will have:

- i) A resurrection body (**1 Corinthians 15:51-54; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18**).
- ii) A mansion in heaven (**John 14:1-3**)
- iii) An inheritance (**1 Peter 1:3-8**)
- iv) Blessedness and no pressure (**Revelation 21:4**)

b) God gave Abram five prophecies in (**Genesis 15**):

- i) The Jews would serve the Egyptians 400 years (v 13).
- ii) God would judge Egypt with ten plagues (v 14).

- iii) The Jews would leave with great wealth (v 14).
- iv) Abram would die at a ripe old age (v 15).
- v) The Jews would return to the Promised Land (v 16).

c) Abram therefore was assured that his descendants would have a great future and to seal this, God, that same day gave Abram the Palestinian Covenant (v 18 -21).

9. It is of interest that the number of promises inferred were five, the animals killed were five and the prophecies given were five, the number five being that of GRACE, God's unmerited favour to man.

HARMONISATION

There are no apparent problems with a direct harmonisation of these accounts

HARMONY

PREDICTION OF PETER'S FALL

Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.

Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.

Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake. I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death. Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. Peter spake the more vehemently, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.

DOCTRINES

DOCTRINE	SECTION	PAGE
ANGELS: COUNTERFEIT AND SATAN	143	69
ANGELS: CROSS AND SATAN	143	70
ANGELS: DEMONS	143	70
ANGELS: SATAN – ADVERSARY	143	71
ANGELS: SATAN'S DESTINY	143	72
ANGELS: SATAN'S WORKS	143	74
ANGELS: SATAN AND SATANIC ATTACK	143	75
ANGELS: SATANIC ATTACK ON BELIEVERS	143	78
ANGELS: SATANIC REVIVAL	143	78
ANGELS: SATAN STRATEGIES AND TACTICS	143	72
BLOOD SACRIFICE	144	91
CHRIST: HYPOSTATIC UNION – GOD-MAN	139	22
CHRIST: ISAIAH 53 – THE SUFFERING SAVIOUR	144	89
CHRIST: KENOSIS OF CHRIST	142	56
CHRIST: TYPES – ADAM AND CHRIST CONTRASTED	142	56
CHRISTIAN LIFE: CONFESSION AND FORGIVENESS	142	56
CHRISTIAN LIFE: DISAGREEMENTS	141	39
CHRISTIAN LIFE: ETERNAL SECURITY	145	102
CHRISTIAN LIFE: FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT	141	39
CHRISTIAN LIFE: LOVE	143	80
CHRISTIAN LIFE: MENTAL ATTITUDE	142	57
CHRISTIAN LIFE: OBEDIENCE	140	33
CHRISTIAN LIFE: REWARDS AND CROWNS	141	40
CHRISTIAN LIFE: SUBMISSION	141	40
CHRISTIAN LIFE: SUFFERING	145	103
CHURCH: COMMUNION – LORD'S SUPPER	144	91
CHURCH: MINISTERS	141	39
COVENANT: NEW COVENANT	144	91
FEAR	139	25
GOD: CHARACTER OF GOD	143	78
GOD: DIVINE INSTITUTIONS – FREEWILL	139	19
GOD: ELECTION AND PREDESTINATION	143	79
GOD: PLAN OF GOD	139	23
HOLY SPIRIT: EFFECTIVE CALLING	140	34
ISRAEL - FEASTS OF ISRAEL	139	13
JUDAS - BETRAYAL	139	15
JUDAS: OUTLINE OF JUDAS' LIFE	139	16
KINGDOM	141	41
KINGDOM: MILLENNIAL KINGDOM	141	41
MONEY	139	26
PETER – DIVINE GUIDANCE	145	101
PRIESTS	139	17
PRIESTS – LEVITICAL PRIESTHOOD	139	18
RELIGION	139	24
SALT	143	82
SALVATION – ATONEMENT – UNLIMITED ATONEMENT	142	55
UNBELIEVER	143	83
WORRY	145	104

HARMONY**PREDICTION OF THE CRUCIFIXION**

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, Ye know that after two days is the feast of the Passover and unleavened bread, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

CONSPIRACY BY THE SANHEDRIN

Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas. And they consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and put him to death. But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

JUDAS MAKES THEM AN OFFER

Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them. And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And when they heard it they were glad, and covenanted to give him thirty pieces of silver. And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

PREPARATIONS FOR THE PASSOVER

And then came the first day of unleavened bread, when they must kill the Passover, his disciples came to Him and said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare for Thee that thou mayest eat the Passover?

And he sendeth forth Peter and John two of his disciples and saith unto them, Go and prepare us the Passover, that we may eat. And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare? And he said unto them, Go ye into the city and when ye are entered into the city, behold there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into the house where he entereth in..

And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house, The Master saith unto thee My time is at hand; I will keep the Passover at thy house with my disciples. Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the Passover with my disciples? And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us.

And his disciples went forth did as Jesus had appointed them; and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the Passover.

THE LAST PASSOVER MEAL

And when the evening was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer: For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves: For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest. And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth.

Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations. And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

JUDAS AND THE DEVIL

Now before the feast of the Passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him; Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God;

THE LORD WASHES THE FEET OF THE DISCIPLES

He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself. After that he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.

Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. Jesus saith to him, He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

THE SERVANT AND THE MASTER

So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them. I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me. Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am he. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

THE DEPARTURE OF JUDAS

And as they sat and did eat, Jesus was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, One of you which eateth with me shall betray me, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me on the table. Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

And they began to be exceeding sorrowful, and began to say unto him one by one, Lord, Is it I? and another said, Is it I? And he answered and said unto them, It is one of the twelve, He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me. The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is as it was determined and written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had never been born.

Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. He then lying on Jesus' breast saith unto him, Lord, who is it? Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing. Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly. Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him. For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night.

FURTHER INSTRUCTION TO THE REMAINING DISCIPLES

Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him.

Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say to you. A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

THE LORD'S SUPPER

And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body which is given for you, this do in remembrance of me. And he took the cup after supper, and when he had given thanks he gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; for this cup the new testament in my blood which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

Verily I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom. And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

PREDICTION OF PETER'S FALL

Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.

Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.

Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake. I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death. Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. Peter spake the more vehemently, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.